

A SPANISH GRAMMAR,  
first collected and published by *Richard Percivale*  
*Gent.* Now augmented and increased with the decli-  
ning of all the Irregular and hard verbes in that tooong, with  
diuers other especiall Rules and necessarie Notes for all  
*such as shall be desirous to attaine the per-*  
fection of the Spanissh  
*tongue.*

Done by IOHN MINSHEU  
Professour of Languages in London.

*Hereunto for the yoong beginners learning and ease, are*  
annexed Speeches, Phrases, and Prouerbes, expounded out of  
diuers Authors, setting downe the line and the leafe where in  
*the same bookes they shall finde them, where by they*  
may not onely vnderstand them, but by  
them vnderstand others, and  
the rest as they shall  
meete with  
them.

*Virescit vulnere Virtus.*



Imprinted at London, by  
*Edm. Bollifant.*

1599

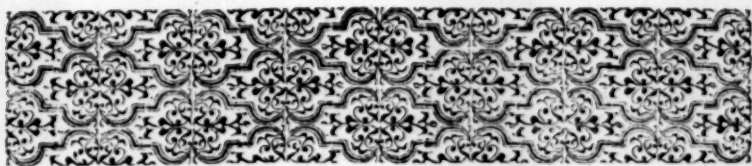
MEMORANDUM

TO THE SECRETARY OF THE ARMY

FROM THE CHIEF OF STAFF

SUBJECT: [Illegible]





TO THE RIGHT WORSHIP-  
FVLL GENTLEMEN STVDENTS OF  
Grayes Inne health and happines, and to the  
*affected to languages there, daily encrease*  
with perfect accomplihment of the  
most commendable qualities.



Vcius a famous Roman meeting on a time with the  
Emperor Marcus, asked him whither he went: who  
answered, I am going to Sextus, vt discam quod  
nondum scio, that I may learne that which I doe not  
yet know. Diogenes the philosopher went to Athens  
to Antisthenes to learne of him somewhat that he  
was ignorant of; but Antisthenes not willing to im-  
part at that time any of his doctrine, repulsed him:  
the other left not off his purpose, but more and more  
importuned him in such sort, that Antisthenes taking  
vp a staffe to driue him away, Diogenes stretched out his necke, willing him to  
strike on hardly, for he should not finde a staffe so hard that could driue him from him  
so long as he might learne any matter by him woorthie the hearing. I speake this  
Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, seeing one was an  
Emperor and might doe what he list, and the other a Cinick philosopher that would  
doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or qualitie, let him bring it  
to you, and if it be too tedious vnto you, or hinder your sport, rather then be troubled  
with him, bob him or flout and scosse him away. Be not imitators of Demosthenes  
which spent more oyle in the lampe in studying to enrich his minde, then wine to  
comfort his bodie; but rather waste your wine and spare your candles: neither be so  
foolish as Cleanthes the philosopher, that drew water in the night that he might  
follow his studie in the day; rather take your ease in the night and your pleasure in  
the day, because Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. Yet Gentlemen, if you  
doe but set before your eies these famous men, which haue beene and are of the house  
you now remaine in, (the names of some few I can now recite) as Sir Nicholas Ba-  
con Lord Keeper, Lord Burleigh Lord Treasurer, Sir Walter Mildmay and Sir  
Francis Walsingham, learned Fitzherbert Lord chiefe Iustice of the common  
pleas

To the Gentlemen students of

pleas which abridged the law, and Sir William Stanford, which wrote the pleas of the crowne, Sergeant Yeluerton, Sergeant Daniell, Sergeant Spurling, Master Brograu, Master Stanhop, Master Hesquit, Master Anthonie and Master Francis Bacon, with diuers others might well mooue you to consider that Qui vult plus qu'vn autre valoir, doit plus qu'vn autre scavoir: He that will be esteemed about another man, must haue more knowledge then another man: And Meglio esser mendicante che ignorante, Better to bee a begger then barren of good letters. But these letters are painefully purchased, why Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quæ pulchra: Therefore Pythagoras counselled his familiar friends that they should choose out the best kinde of life, although the most difficult: and Salust saith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and Seneca affirmeth, that base is that honor which is gotten with idlenes, which the Roman pollicie when it flourished confirmed by an auncient lawe duly kept, that euery father that had children of the age of tenne yeeres should become suretie for them, that they should not lye idle, or commit any excessse, which was so neerely looked vnto, that they publicly chastised Cato the Censors sonne for a saucines committed, and banished a brother of good old Cina for lining idlie among them. None durst presume to go into the streetes but hee carried some token in his hande what kinde of life or studie hee followed, which if in these times it were in force, how many streete walkers would retire themselues to some vertuous studies. But methinke I heare some saie, Ars longa & vita brevis, I answered them with the Thebane Philosopher, which in the 75. Olympiade, came to the solemne sports kept about the citie Olympia in honor of Iupiter, who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his shooes he had sowed, his shirt he had wouen &c. being demanded where he had learned so manie mens arts, answered, In the beginning there was but one arte at all, & that the sloth of men had caused that one to be diuided into many, and how euerie particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in generall had knowledge of. To this purpose Pythagoras said, He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beast among men: He that knoweth no more then he hath need of, is a man among brute beasts: He that knoweth al that may be knowen, is a God among men. So many examples present themselues that rather time would faile then matter herein, & for that my case standeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counsell, or to giue thanks for good turnes receiued, and not prescribe precepts, I thinke good briefly and plainely to shew vnto you how hauing founde my selfe beholding to some of you, whom I had read vnto in the toongs, I thought nothing could better agree with my profession as to shewe my gratefull minde towards you, then by labouring for your ease, in these instructions of the Spanish toong: which if they be thankfully receiued, I shall thinke my labour well imployed. Yet before I could make an ende of this and the Dictionarie, I did as Robertus Stephanus saith of himselfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called Thesaurus linguæ Græcæ & Latinæ; I haue made Thesaurum, that is, a Treasure for others, but thereby haue made my selfe a bagger, whereof some of the right vertuous and woorthie gentlemen of that your house, (to whom I am most beholding, and therefore stande most in affection bounde) vnderstanding,

Pythagoras.

languages in Grayes Inne.

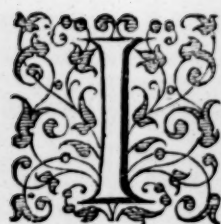
derstanding, wished me to goe forward in so good a worke, and not to giue  
 ou'r for some wants: which then of themselues they supplied, whose good kindnes if  
 I forget, I wish the law of Draco, ( which was to punish with death, if there were  
 any found so vnthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbear to  
 acknowledge his benefactors for the same ) might be inflicted on me: for there can  
 be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, then to bee reputed ingratefull: al-  
 though in these daies fower as great euils left unpunished as those that are puni-  
 shed, Vntemperatenes, Vnhamfastnes, Vnfaithfulness, and Vnthankfulness.  
 But to begin with my benefactors in this worke in order as they began with mee in  
 Grayes Inne, first Master William Willoughby, a gentleman as vertuouslie  
 minded and of as good carriage as the rest: next Master Henric Bing, whose ex-  
 cellent learning, placed together with such gentlemanlike conditions, makes him be-  
 loved among the Elders, and honored among the younger sort: after him Master  
 Frances Barneham, and Master Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good  
 wits, and no lesse good natures: I may not forget the good woorths of Master Ro-  
 bert Hill, and Master Checke, gentlemen well studied in the most commendable  
 kindes of learning: Master Daufon of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Ma-  
 ster Helmes and Master Gill both for their good parts better knowne then I can  
 heere set downe: Master Thomas Mafon, and Master Iohn Roberts, adorned  
 with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues: Master Archer  
 as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning. The rest of the  
 well accomplisht yoong gentlemen whom I know not, I saie of them as my minde  
 is towards them best: Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall one plaie on ano-  
 ther, I pray you cast all on mee, for I protest none of them euer knewe that I  
 ment to write vnto them, much lesse put any of their names in  
 print. Thus wishing to you as much as Cicero  
 writing to his friend Atticus, would limite to  
 be wished to his dearest friends, viz. To  
 enioy health, to possesse honor, and  
 neuer to suffer want,  
 I rest:

At your command

IOHN MINSHEU.



## To the Reader.



If it be vanitie and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches together, when he knowes not whether he be wise or foolish that shall enioy it: we may thinke the sweate of our spirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will prooue sober or franticke, to whom we leaue the possession of our trauels. But the Spaniard saith, *Quien de miedo se murió de cagaxones le hizieron la sepultura*; and because as the Italian saying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted stinking by many: and *Dal asino non ne hai che calzi & pesti*: I am resolued for this once to put on merchants cares, to heare with patience euerie mans speech and dispraisings of his wares, because *Quot homines, tot sententia*, So many men, so many mindes. Therefore he that should leaue off any good worke for any mans ill speech, may well be likened to that poore feely fellow, which on a time went with one of his sonnes with his Ass before him to the wood, to fetch him a load thereof for his wife and children, and meeting trauellers by the way; some misliking with him that he should goe on foote, and let his Ass goe leere; others, that he roade himselfe, and suffered his childe to goe a foote; others, that he loaded the poore Ass with two persons, being scarce able to carrie himselfe; others, when he left his sonne alone riding and himselfe go on foote; in such sort that the countrey fellow could not tel what to do, seeing do what he could, still he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned sad home to his house without wood, where he remained for feare of fault finders, till he and his household were neere starued with colde, till at last finding his owne simplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as he met by the way, he said; *Hee that passeth for other mens speeches and reproofes, endureth colde and a thousand greefes*; and he that will throw a stone at euerie dog, shall haue a wearie arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ferá, bien aurá*, And for all the dogs barking, the moone will stand where it did. And I say to the malicious, *Mets ta main sovent en ton sein, et tu ne me diras de ton prochain*. And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli auvien quel che non crede*, According to a Historie I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers sonne for his cupbearer: The Emperours steward and vncle, for enuie perswaded the cupbearer that his breath did stinke, and wished therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedie were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his court, by saying his breath did stinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewise told him how he should see the cupbearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperour conceiued such wrath against him, (as the saying is, the anger of a Prince the messenger of death) that

*To the Reader.*

that he sent expresse commaund to his burners of bricke, that they should burne that man that came vnto them first the next morrow; and likewise commaunded his cupbearer to be there so earely that none might be before him: on the morrow morning verie earely the cupbearer going, and passing by a church in the way went in and fell into such a sound sleepe, that it was the after noone before he could awake. The steward in the meane time to see the euent of the cupbearer, went and was burned himselfe aliue. The cupbearer at his returne signified to the Emperour what had happened, and also was desirous to knowe of the Emperour why he should send him thither, &c. If neither Histories nor reason perswade them, they must needs be answered with silence, and so gentle Reader I rest silent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieued at my mishap and disabilitie, then wanting good will or liking to doe thee seruice.

*Hæc raptim.*

*Vale.*

*John Minsheu.*



In opus M. Minshewi edendum,

Iohannis Keperi generosi

ἱεραρχόν.

*Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen fberi  
Vocibus & veris noscere gentis opes,  
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,  
Hesperiam & totam noscere quisquis aues:  
Minshæum legito, lectum (mibi crede) probabis,  
Ingenium, gentium, munera, verba, fidem:  
Qui totidem subiit noctesque diesque labores,  
Et flores veluti sedula carpsit apes;  
Qui tibi qui patriæ, sese sumptumque dicauit,  
Edidit, & tantæ sedulitatis opus,  
Aut lauda, aut saltem noli mordere, latrando  
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.*

Soneto de un capitan Español  
del Autor.

De un diamantino muro circuydo  
Con puertas de metál ynpenetrable;  
Y por guarda un dragón fiero espantáble,  
Era el huérto de Atlante defendido:  
Mas siendo del fuerte Ercules vencido,  
Fue abierta la puerta yncontratable,  
Y las pomas de precio ynestimáble  
Gozáron luego quantos han querido,  
Vos *Minchen* soys el Ercules famoso,  
Que a pesar de la ynbidia (dragon fiero)  
Abristes puerta al huerto ameno umbroso,  
De la yspanica lengua, que primero  
Cerrada estubo al yngles curioso,  
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.

## The Proeme.



*Spanish is a speech, whereof in times past (in Spaine) there hath beene sower kinds used: The first and ancientest is the Biskaine, which was the speech of the prouince of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean toong, as the learned in them both affirme, to whome it plainly appeereth that this is of the greatest antiquitie.*

*Four sorts of Spanish.  
1. Biskay toong most ancient.  
This toong drawen from the Caldean.*

*The next is that which was spoken in the kingdom of Granado, and in parte in the kingdomes of Andaluza, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique,*

*2. Arabique toong in olde time used in Granado, Andaluza, Valencia, and Aragon, and yet retaineth it in the pronounciation of these letters, S, B, X, Z.*

*whose originall is the Hebrew almost among them quite worne out, yet to this daie they keepe the pronounciation of some of their letters still, as S, G, j, X, Z.*

*The thirde is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the prouince of Gascoigne, from the ancient citie Limojes: they spake this in the kingdomes of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuiça and Cerdena. This Catalan toong was called Prouençal: and the Italians confesse that the Prouençals were the first inuentors of their rimes and verses, which are so much prised in Italie where Petrarque, Boccace, and Dante, giue some testimonie in retaining their wordes in manie places.*

*3. Catalan toong or Prouençal, a kinde of French, had originall from Gascoigne, and was used in Cataluna, Mallorca, Iuiça, Cerdena.*

*The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly used and spoken thorow all Spaine, and is called Léngua vulgar, the mother toong, otherwise Léngua Castellana, or Española, the Castilian or Spanish toong, principally used in Aragon, Andaluza, Murcia, Castilla, Nuëua, and Veja, León: also in Portugall, although the Portugall toong haue such difference in certaine wordes and pronounciations that it may well be called a language by it selfe, euen as the English and Scottish, yet in truth, it is not so seuered, but that they sprange from one fountaine, and haue one descendance.*

*4. The Spanish now used. Difference betwene the Spanish and Portugall toong.*

*This Lengua vulgar or Spanish toong draweth his originall from the Latine or Romaine, and because the Romaine conquerours were most politicke in providing for the continuance of their estates & language to their posteritie, by planting where they woone, \* Colonies and garrisons; as also not permitting any stranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buie, sell, or traffique, but in the Romaine or Latine toong, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spanish retaineth still to this daie so much of the Latine toong. And by reason of the Incurfion and ouerrunning of so many strange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceased not till they had ouerrunne the most part of Europe, yet so settled themselves in Andaluza in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandaluzia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as also Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious li-*

*\* A Colonie is a place inhabited, whither people are sent to dwell: or people sent to inhabit such place: or a citie, the people whereof once came from another citie or countrey. Why the Spanish keepeth so much of the Latine. Andaluza, whereof first so named.*

## The Proeme.

Howe the  
Moore first en-  
tered and con-  
quered Spaine.  
Chro. of Spaine.

uing and vnbrieded lust of Don Rodrigo then king, in dishonouring and de-  
flowring a ladie called Cáva the daughter of earle Iulian, one of his nobles.

By meanes heereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his  
owne first propertie and nature, admitting wordes, accents, and pronunciations of  
other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the La-  
tine and aboue named toongs: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine then  
of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine toong altered or corrupted.

For Spanish wordes comming from the Latine, marke the table heere following  
and their like.

Spanish wordes drawen from the Moorish toong begin much with Al, as Al-  
cúza, a vessell for oyle: Alfidél, or Alfilér, a pin: Almúd, a measure, a pecke: Al-  
guarísimo, Arithmeticke: Almoháda, a pillow, &c. or in ç, as çaherír, to vnbraid,  
çahórda, a hogstie: or sounde on r, or x, Almaráxa, an ewer of glasse: Xabón  
soape: Almoradúx, marjoram: Arredrár, to driue away: Arrélde, fower pounce  
waight, &c. also in z, as Zagál, a shepherd. And at this day the Moores in spea-  
king Spanish for júro a Dios, I sweare by God, they saie jureux a Deux: for Hom-  
bre, they say Homber, for Vuéstra mercéd, your worship or mastership, they saie  
Voxár mérxé.

Generall

# Generall Observations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

3

Substantives of the Latines in <i>us</i> , as	} in Spanish thus,	<i>Charitas,</i>	<i>Caridad.</i>
		<i>Majestas,</i>	<i>Magestad.</i>
		<i>Crudelitas,</i>	<i>Crueldad.</i>
		<i>Civitas,</i>	<i>Ciudad.</i>
		<i>Fidelitas,</i>	<i>Fedelidad.</i>
		<i>Securitas,</i>	<i>Seguridad.</i>
		<i>Obscuritas,</i>	<i>Escuridad.</i>
		<i>Conformitas,</i>	<i>Conformidad.</i>
		<i>Calamitas,</i>	<i>Calamidad.</i>
		<i>Voluntas, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Voluntad.</i>

The most part of words in Latine beginning with P, changed in L, as	} In Spanish,	<i>Plenus,</i>	<i>Léno.</i>
		<i>Planus,</i>	<i>Llano.</i>
		<i>Pluvia,</i>	<i>Lluvia.</i>
		<i>Plaga,</i>	<i>Llaga.</i>
		<i>Plorare.</i>	<i>Llorar.</i>

In like sort F, turned into H, as	} Spanish,	<i>Facere,</i>	<i>Hazér.</i>
		<i>Faba,</i>	<i>Háva.</i>
		<i>Fax,</i>	<i>Héz.</i>
		<i>Falco,</i>	<i>Halcón.</i>
		<i>Farina,</i>	<i>Harína.</i>
		<i>Fætor,</i>	<i>Hedór.</i>
		<i>Formosus,</i>	<i>Hermóso,</i>
		<i>Ferrum,</i>	<i>Hierro,</i>
		<i>Fervor.</i>	<i>Hervór.</i>

The Latine ending in <i>io</i> , made Spanish by put- ting <i>n</i> to it, as	} Spanish,	<i>Educatio,</i>	<i>Educación.</i>
		<i>Religio,</i>	<i>Religión.</i>
		<i>Electio,</i>	<i>Elección.</i>

The Latine ending in <i>um</i> , by changing <i>um</i> into <i>o</i> , as	} Spanish,	<i>Ornamentum,</i>	<i>Ornamento,</i>
		<i>Experimentum,</i>	<i>Experimento,</i>
		<i>Exemplum.</i>	<i>Exemplo.</i>

The Latine ending in <i>lis</i> , by taking away <i>is</i> , as	} Spanish,	<i>Materialis,</i>	<i>Material.</i>
		<i>Finalis,</i>	<i>Finál.</i>
		<i>Subtilis,</i>	<i>Sutíl.</i>
		<i>Debilis, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Débil.</i>

The Latine ending in the Infinitive mode in <i>e</i> , by taking away <i>e</i> by Apocope, as	} Spanish,	<i>Castigare,</i>	<i>Castigár.</i>
		<i>Amare,</i>	<i>Amár.</i>
		<i>Tenere,</i>	<i>Tenér.</i>
		<i>Perdere,</i>	<i>Perdér.</i>
		<i>Sentire,</i>	<i>Sentír.</i>
		<i>Salire.</i>	<i>Salír.</i>



By adding to the end of a word by *Paragoge*, as *Apostema*, *Appetere*, *Ana*. } *Spanish*, { *Apostemación*, *Apetecer*, *Anade*.

By adding to the middle of a word by *Epenthesis*, as *Cerium*, *Caelum*, *Membrum*, *Messis*. } *Spanish*, { *Cierito*, *Cielo*, *Miembro*, *Miése*.

By adding to the beginning of a word by *Prothesis*, as *Plumescere*, *Capistrare*, *Scala*, *Scandalum*. } *Spanish*, { *Emplumecér*, *Encabistrár*, *Escala*, *Escándalo*.

By changing a letter by *Metathesis*, in the middle of a word, of the second person plurall of the Imperative mode, as D and L changing places, as so; Castigáde, they write Castigalde, so; Dezidle, they say and write Dezilde.

The Spanish sheweth his original from the Latine, although by corruption many words have changed letters, as in these following & their like, as

a	c	Lac, milke, Lèche. <i>Casew</i> , cheese, <i>Quéso</i> .
b	u	<i>Barba</i> , a beard, <i>Bárva</i> . <i>Bibo</i> , I drinke, <i>Bévo</i> .
c	g	<i>Amicus</i> , a friend, <i>amigo</i> . <i>Acinus</i> , a grape, <i>agúdo</i> .
e	i	<i>Directus</i> , directed, <i>derigido</i> . <i>lectus</i> , read, <i>leydo</i> .
f	h	<i>Ferrū</i> , iron, <i>hiérro</i> . <i>facere</i> , to make or do, <i>hazér</i> .
g	y	<i>Regnum</i> , a kingdome, <i>Reyno</i> .

No difficulty  
in the Spanish  
tongue or other  
vulgar tongues  
comming from  
the Latine.

I procéde no further herein, but leave every Latinist to consider of them as he shall méete with them by reading, whereby he shall manifestly perceiue by the multitude of words in this tongue deriued from the Latine, how easie it is for euerie meane scholler speedily to obtaine the knowledge of the same, and with these rules and precepts, which here I shall set downe, I doubt not but that every one (desirous thereof) may with facilitie and short time speake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the best order (according to the saying, *Qui bene diuidit bene docet*, He that diuideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to diuide this present Grammar into *Orthographie*, *Prosodie*, *Etymologie*, and *Syntaxis*, of which though I shall not deale with all of all that may be said, yet at least that shall bee necessarie to be saide for the instruction of the learner in this tongue.



# OF ORTHOGRAPHIE<sup>5</sup>

## Of Grammar and hir parts.

**G**rammar is an Arte teaching the right rules of true speaking and writing, and it is derived from the Greeke word *γραμμα*, which is *litera*, as much as to say *scientia literaria*, a knowledge of letters. Definition of Grammar.

### Division of Grammar.

Grammar according to Quintilian, is two fold: *Historicall*, and *Methodicall*.  
*Historicall*, gotten by imitation of Authors.  
*Methodicall*, is taught by precepts, which onely we here handle.

### Subdivision of Grammar.

Grammar methodicall is divided into fower parts, *Orthographie*, *Prosody*, *Etymology*, & *Syntaxis*.

*Orthographie*, concerning in letters.

*Prosody*, in syllables.

*Etymologie*, in words.

*Syntaxis*, in sentences.

*Orthographie*, of the Greeke word *ὀρθος* right, & *γραφειν* writing.

*Prosodia*, of *προσ*, i. ad, & *ῥοδῖ*, *cantus*, that is *Accentus*.

*Etymologia*, of *ἔτυμωδ*, true, & *λόγος* speech.

*Syntaxis*, of *σύν*, i. con, & *τάξις*, *ordo*, *quasi*, *coordinatio*.

Division of Grammar.

Propertie of the fower parts of Grammar.

*Orthographie* is a right rule of true writing, as before of *ὀρθος* right, & *γραφειν* writing, whereby euery word is to be set downe with his true letters, as *Cierto*, certaine, not *Sierto*.

Definition of Orthographie.

Hereto belongeth *Orthopœia*, which is a right rule of true speaking, of *ὀρθος* right, & *παιν* word, that in speaking men pronounce not more grosse or final, then the nature of language will allow, or otherwise then the accustomed manner of pronunciation vsually permitted therein, as *Vino*, wine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, *Veino*, but smaller as they pronounce the double ee, *Veeno*, *Dios*, God, not *Deios*, but *Dheeos*. But of this hereafter in the letters more at large.

Definition of Orthopœia.

And because *Orthographie* (the former part of our Grammar) chiefly consisteth in the true writing of euery word with his right letters: It must of necessitie follow, that whosoener speaketh, or heareth a tongue spoken in his proper *Idioma*, and would write downe the same so spoken, that he know the power and propriety of each letter in that tongue (because of letters are framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole speech, and language, the which neglected, must needs bring a confusion to the learner, and little or no fruite to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpose.

The force of letters.

There are in the Spanish tongue 27. letters, whereof 24. are single, and three double.

The single, A. b. c. d. e. f. g. h. i. j. k. l. m. n. o. p. q. r. s. t. v. x. y. z.

The double are these, ch. ll. ñ.

Letters, Double letters.

If any aske the question, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it more letters then the Latine: I answer, that although it be now (for the most part of words therein) corrupt & broken Latine, yet it had at the first (as in the Proeme before going) his originall from the Caldean, Arabique, and Moores tongue, of which they referre some \* letters.

Nota.

\* ç. g. j. x. z.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet or crosse row, without beginning with the bowels, and then skipping from one consonant to another, distracting the memorie of the young beginner in a tongue, which would much better reaine the precepts given thereon, so they might not be diuinen to a new order of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be drawn from.

**A** Is founded plainly, with opening the mouth as in the Latine, French, and Italian, as in English man, can: so in Spanish, *Manáda*, a floske, *Entaláda*, a salade of herbs.

**B** Is as the Latine, and is called *litera labialis*, one of the labiall or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without ioyning the lips together. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: so in Spanish, *Bacia*, a bowle, *Birro*, clay, but in the middell of a word, except the word come of the Latine. The Spaniards vsually confoundeth it with Y consonant, and

Band V conso-  
nant, written  
and pronounced  
one for another.

Nota.

Be cast away.

Ce cast away.

ç pronounced as  
the Italian ç

ç pronounced  
as English  
Chf.

D pronounced  
as Dh.

Ga.  
Go, Gu.  
Gua.

Gue, Gui, like  
Ghe, Ghi.

Ge, Gi, as je,  
ji, which is as  
in English the  
Shi.

G and j conso-  
nant written  
one for another.

foundeth it as V consonant, as Trabájo, trauell, they pronounce Travájo: Palábras, wordes, they found Palábras: Cábra, a goat, Cávra: Labor, labour, Lavór: Albáda, a parkesable, Alváda: Alabáda, a holbar, Alaváda: so oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Bay-lár, to daunce, Vaylár: Balquíña, a peticoate, a kirtle, Valquíña: Bellóca, an arcoyne, Vellóca: Berméjo, red colour, Verméjo: Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. Wherefore I advise the studious in the Spanish tong, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of these letters, let him turne to the other: as if he finde not Báyo, which is used in good Authors for Baye, loured, or Bayard, let him looke Váyo, and there he shall finde the same: If not Vóar, to bathe, looke Bañar: If not Vóz, looke Bóz, a voice.

B In the midst of a word going before another consonant, and making the pronunciation harder, is cut off in Spanish, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Absénte, Ausénte, Obscúro, Ofcúro, or Escúro.

C This letter hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o or u follow it, he is sounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cóco, well, Cuchara, a spoon: so likewise in the middle of a word, as Descáño, rest, Escória, dross, Escudilla, a dish: but going before e or i: pronounce almost as the Italian ç, as Prudentia, Disfialze, or their before ia or io, as Prudentia, Justificatione, Cecina, powdered flesh, Ciruela, a plum.

C Before t, cut off as Acto, an act: the Spaniard saith, A to, Pacto, a covenant, Páto.

ç Marked with a dash vnder it thus, ç, called ç, Cerilla, or ç Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique tong, from whence it was first taken: it is founded by putting the tong to the ranches of the teeth, as the French ç, çien ç, or verie nare: the Italian ç, as Dilligença, Sciença. This ç must be so pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or u follow: and is sounded as in English Chf, as çaraguelles, great garcoine or Spanish hose, çoçóbras, crosse blows of fortune, çúfre, bymist one: pronounce Thsaraguelles, Thsolóbras, Thsúfre, in like maner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, çiéto, a hundred: pronounce Thsénogiles, Thsénto.

D Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latin, French, and Italian: as in English, Dagger, Doctor: so in Spanish, Dágo, a dagger, Dóze, a dosen: this word Dios is except from this rule, and is pronounced as these that follow: that is, if d come in the midst or end of a word, you must pronounce him as d in Greke, as dh in English, as Cada, every, Cádha, fidelidád, fidelitie, fidelidhadh.

E Is as the Latin, and the Italian, and as in English, Bend, I end: so in Spanish, Bende-zir, to blesse, Bever, to drinke: and it must neuer be sounded so small as the English e, as fee, wee: nor so broad as the French do their e feminine, as Femme, a woman, pronounced Fam-ma, but betwixt both as first above.

F Is as the Latin and the Italian tongues, and iust as the English. The Spaniard writeth him when the Latins write Ph, as Philosophus, in Spanish Filósofo.

G Answerable to the Hebrew Gimel, ç hath two maner of soundings according to the vowels which follow it, if a o or u immediately followe, it is pronounced as in the Latin, Gabriel, Gorgias, Gubernator: Italian, Galante, Gotta, Guffare: French, Garçon, Gourmand: as in English, Gate, Gold, Gutter: so in Spanish, Gáto, a lazare, a leापour, Gófo, rude, Gúla, guttonie.

But if after the u immediately come a, as Guante, a glove, sound Gwante: Agua, water, Agwa: Mengua, want, Mengwa.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French Guerre, Guide: as in English Gueft, guide: so in Spanish Guérta, war, Guía, a guide: sound Ghera, Ghia, except these wordes follow: wing, Guéro, able, Aguéro, soothsaying, Garguéro, the throat, Siguéro, a diawer or tower of a boate with a roape, Huguéro, a woodpile, Triguéro, a sparowe that lieth in the wheate, Ciguénça, a flooke, Pediguénço, wanton, Halaguénço, flattering, Siguénça, a citie of Spaine, Verguénça, shame, Aguélo, a grandfather, Deguélo, a beheading, Reguélo, belking, Vnguéto, ointment: and words that come of the Infinitive mode in Guár, as Enxaguar, to weter, Enxague, Menguar, to want, Mengue.

G Before e or i is sounded as the Latin Gero: Italian, Giorno: French, Gisant: English, Gelfrey, Gales: or more like the Spanish, called j jota, or j consonant, which is pronounced as sh in English: so they say Génir, to groane, pronouncing as it were writen in English Ghemir, Gingibre, ginger, Ghinshope.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in speaking of this G before e and i, from the j consonant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Lináge, Menfáge, Lifongéro, Mageftid, or Ajéno, Lináge, Menfáge, Lifonjéro, Majestad.

G Before n in the middle of a word lost, as Ignominia, Inominia, ignominie, Ignorancia, Inorancia, ignorance.

H This letter is neither vowel nor consonant, but a note of aspiration, it is called in the Spanish as in the English Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as some

some nations do, Ha, because it doth so import in pronouncing as in English, Harnes, Harnes, Hare, Hange.

This H in the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spanish with more vehemencie and emphasis, and in the middle or end of a word weakely and faintly.

H in beginning of a word.

In the beginning he must be pronounced with more force, or else there would be no difference found in speaking these wordes, and their like, Háca, a nagge: Acá hither: as Ven acá, come hither, Hásta, untill, and Asta for a speare: Háya, a beech tree: A'ya, a nurse: Háso, a spindle: U'lo, vse.

In the middle of a word not so forcible, as Ahechár, pronounce as Aechár, Alholi, Aloli, a barne or garner.

H in middle of a word.

This H goeth before all the five bowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done: Higa-do, the liver: Hollin, the sute of a chimney: Háso, a spindle. But it may not in true Spanish orthographie be written before a consonant, as Crísto, not Chrísto.

Besides it is lost after T, as Ortografía, not Orthografía, Teólogo, not Theólogo.

H taken away.

With P also it is lost, and the P turned into F, as Filósofo, not Filosófo, which they must observe that would write the Spanish tong aright in all that are like these.

Where Ue followeth H, it is pronounced as W, Huerto, an orchard: Huéso, a bone: pronounce Wuerto, Wueso: or as if G went before thus, Gwerto, Gwesso, which I take to be more fit for the Englishmans pronounciation for these and the like wordes.

Hue pronounced as Wue.

That word which beginneth with H, shall not have H in the middle, except C goe before it, as in Hécho, made, Hechizar, to bewitch and the like.

There be three kindes of I in the Spanish, that is small i, Greeke y, and j jota, or consonant. These two i, y, with a verie small slender sounde, as the French and Italians doe, which is as the double e in English, wee, thee, see, decree, so in Spanish, Tiráno, a tirant, Teerano: Vida, life, Veeda, not as Englishmen pronounce Teyrino, veida, which all other nations mislike in hearing them speaking Latine, saying, Propino tibi, they pronounce Propino tibi, which I would with they would but marke, and take notice thereof: for the French, Italian, and Spaniard, do learne and are taught by their Scholemasters to pronounce the Latine different from their owne tong, otherwise one nation should not understand another speaking the Latine. But in this tong as in the Italian and French, they must observe except they will fall into the vice of *Iotacismus* and be laughed at, and not be understood by strangers when they speake or reade.

I three kinds.

A note for Englishmen.

This small i is used in a word as a bowell by it selfe, as Tinea, yncke, and in a diphthong, as Niéro, a nephew.

Y is put in the beginning of a word before a bowell or consonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the ende Y, as Daréys, Podéys.

J jota or consonant, which this tong taketh of the Trabique, is pronounced as in French, Jamais, Deja, Jehan, in English like sh, as Jardin, a garden, Jardo, a pot harro, ojo, an eie Oho: Hoja, a leafe, Jofha: Oveja, a sheepe, Quejha: Abeja, a bee, Jbejha: In Spanish and thereabout, they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but more in the throte, as Chardin, Charro, Ozho, Hozha, Ovezha, Abezha.

J pronounced like sh.

Some authoys in the Spanish write these wordes (pet ill) and the like, with H. Hierusalem, Hierónimo, which should be thus Jerusalem, Jerónimo.

The Spaniard neuer useth this letter but when it is required of the Greeke and proper names then sounded as in the English, as Kalendas.

L, M, N, O, P. Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and just as in English: But P may not be doubled in Spanish, as Approvar, Appetito, P before T in the middle of a word is lost, as Captivo, pronounce Caurivo, captive.

P not doubled. P cast away.

Neither can L be doubled in Spanish when the word commeth of the Latine, and keepeth the Latine sounde, as llástre, in Latine *Illustrus*: Silaba, in Latine *Syllaba*: Colégio, Collegium. So likewise of N, as Tiráno, not Tiránno, in Latine *Tyrannus*, but when these keepe not the sounde of the Latine, loke hereafter in double Ll, n, and there you shall finde howe they are pronounced.

When L not doubled.

When N not doubled.

Nota.

Q hath two pronounciations, not of his owne nature, but by reason of a bowell following him.

If u follow as in Latine and English, Quantitie, Quarter, so in Spanish Quando, when, Quartána, Quál.

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian Che, Chi, or the French Que, Que, Qui Qui, as English Ke, Ki, as Queción, a Question or quarrell, Kestión, Quicto, quiet, Kieto, except when the word is Latine, as Delinquente, Eloquent.

pronounced as Ke, Ki.

R with



**R** With the Greekes and Latins termed *Litera canina*, so the Spaniard calleth him *Letra per-rina*, the doggish letter, because dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, sound this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the beginning of a word it is sounded strongly, as the Grecians doe sound. The Spaniard saith *Ráyo*, a sun beane, *Réy*, a king, or if it be doubled in the midst of a word you cannot sound with too great vehemencie, as *Bárro*, Clay, *Cárró*, a Cart. But if it be in the midst of a word and single, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as *ára*, an altar, *Móro*, a blacke Horse.

**S** With x, z, and c, are pronounced (although the one more plaine and sounding, and the rest lesse) by putting the tongue to the roofe of the mouth, and then hissing out the voice with the lips open as a snake, and therefore the Greekes called this letter S by that hissing name, as also made it in fashion double as a snake, with his head lifted vp, accordingly is it made in Latine, Italian, and Spanish. In Spanish these letters are called *Culebrinas*, which is snake, of *Culebra*, a snake, which useth hissing.

S made like a  
snake doubled  
with his head  
lifted up.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in English *Sand*, *Seeth*, *Shin*, *Shod*, *Sudden*, so in Spanish *Sabér*, *Sembrár*, *Sóbra*, *Sudór*.

But if S be single in the midst of a word betwene two vowels, then with a gentle sound almost like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as *Eglise* a Church, *Cause*, so in Spanish *Causa*, *Rosa*, *uso*, *pálo*. But if it be doubled, then strongly, as in English *Crossed*, *tossed*, so in Spanish *Fuécimos* *gruéllo*.

Nota, S neuer  
in beginning of  
a word except a  
vowel follow.

In the end of a word as Z, as *Cárras*, *Letters*, *Cámaras*, *Chambers*, or going to stole. And note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a consonant next followeth. Therefore you must write *Espero*, I hope, and not *Spéro*. *Escriuo*, I write, and not *Sciwo*.

T neuer turned  
in Ci in Span-  
ish, as in other  
tongues.

**T** Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French & English, except it can neuer sound ci, as the Latins, Italians, French and English doe when after i followeth i with a vowel, as in Latine *Prudentia*, Italian *Amicitia*, French *Justification*, English *Ambition*, in Spanish it must be written *Prudencia*, *Amicicia*, *Justificación*, *Ambición*, otherwise the writing were false, and you should pronounce Ti as in *Tibi*.

Also if H follow T, as *Theólogo*, *Theopómpo*, write and pronounce *Teólogo*, *Teopómpo*.

U pronounced  
broad as ou.

**U** Being a vowel not to be pronounced with a small sound as English, *Strue*, *Bue*, *Crue*, *Flue*, but as the French doth in his diphthong *ou*, almost as the English *ou*, as *Tou*, *Buche*, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a consonant is pronounced as in other languages in the beginning of a word, as *Vaca*, a Cow, *Véna*, a Veine, *Vino*, Wine, *Vóto*, a Vow, *Vilgo*, the common people, in the midst of a word as *Aváro*, *Gávia*, *úva*. Also when two u come together, and a vowel following, the second is a consonant, as *úvo*, *Túve*, except *Vuelro*.

X pronounced  
as sh,  
X and j written  
often in Spanish  
one for another.

**X** Is one of the *Culebrinas* letras, the snake or hissing letters, as above said in the letter S, and is pronounced like J consonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as *Xarúe*, *Xirrup*, *Jarúe*, and is pronounced as the French *ch*, as the English *sh*, as *Faxa*, a waltband, *Brúxa*, a hag, *Flóxo*, weak, *Fasha*, *Brusha*, *Flosho*.

**Y** Is about in I.

**Z** Is called in Spanish *Zéca*, as the Hebrew *Zain*, from whence it is drawn, and from the Spanish tongue, and is pronounced as the English *Z*, as *Zángano*, a dzane, *Zélo*, zeale, *Zodiaco*, the Zodiacke, so likewise in the end of a word, as *Bóz*, a voice, *Crúz*, a Crosse.

Ch as in Eng-  
lish Ch.

**Ch** Before any of the five vowels to be pronounced as in English, *Chapman*, *Chiefely*, *Chicken*, *Chop*, *Chowle*: so in Spanish, *Chamelóte*, *Chamlet*: *Chaminéa*, a Chimney: *Chórró*, a broke: *Chúfma*, a companie of people of the common sort.

Ll pronounced  
as Li.

**Ll** As gl in Italian, as *Caragli*, *Mogli*, *Figli*, as double Ll in French, as *Fille*, *Coquille*, as Li in English, as *Lláno*, plaine: *Lléno*, full: *Llover*, to raime: *Lluvia*, raime: pronounce *Liáno*, *Liéno*, *Lióver*, *Liuvia*: so likewise in the middle of a word, as *Querrellólo*, *Kerrello*, quarrellsome: in the end of a word neuer in Spanish written double, as *Mil*, a thousande, not *Mill*.

ñ pronounced  
as ni.

**ñ** Is the Italian and French gn, *Montaña*, *Campaña*, French *Compaignon*, *Mignon*, in English as ni: as *Montaña*, a mountaine, *Montaña*, *Campaña*, *Campania*, so *Dña*, *lolle*, *Dannyo*, *Baño*, a bath, *Bannyo*.

## Of Orthographie in Diphthonges.

**A** Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a sounding together of two different bowels, as if they were but one, as in English, *Ide, Audito.* *Definition of diphthongs.*

In Spanish there are twelve sorts.

The first in *ai, ay*, as *gaita, andáys, cantáis.* But when two bowels come together and make more then one sounde, they should be marked over head with two pickles, to take awaie confusion, as *Caida*, pronounced *Cáida*, and so the rest.

The second in *ao*, where *a* is more sounded then *o*, as *Quartáo, a nag, Saráo, a hall to dance* 1. *Ai, ay.* in, *Vilbáo*, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as *Cats maule.* 2. *Ao.*

The third in *au*, where *a* sounds more then *u*, as *Cáula, Autór, Caudillo*: except *Laúd*, a lute, 3. *Au.* *Ataúd*, a tombe: *La-úd, Ata-úd.*

The fourth in *ei* and *ey*, where *e* is more sounded then *i*, as *Réy, a king, Léy, a law*: when 4. *Ei, ey.* they are leuened, write them with two pickles thus, *Leíkes, Reír.*

The fifth in *eu*, where *e* is most perceived, as *Féudo, Déudo, Réuma*: bring disfigured write 5. *Eu.* thus: *Reúntar, Reúngir.*

The sixt in *ia*, in which *i* is more heard sound then *a*, as *Saiz, Vaiz, Malicia, Prefencia*: except 6. *Ia.* *Mia, Dia, Porfia, Desvia.*

The seventh, *ie, ye*, where *e* is most heard pronounced, as *Viéndo, Sciéndo, Viéne, Bién, Quién,* 7. *Ie, ye.* *Quiéra, Arriéndo, Dispiéndo, Apriéto, Pie, Piédra, Tierra, Cielo, Infierno, Díez, Siéte, Miel, Hiel.*

The eight in *io, yo*, where *o* is most sounded, as *Yo, Dió, Vió*: except *Mío, Río, Frio, Tío.* 8. *Io, yo.*

The ninth in *iu*, where *i* is more heard then the *u*, as *Ciudad, a citie.* 9. *Iu.*

The tenth in *oi, oy*, as *Soy, Doy, Voy, Oygo*: except *Oydo, Rojdo.* 10. *Oi, oy.*

The eleuenth in *ue*, where *e* is more sounded then *u*, as *Fuérça, Muérte, Fuérte, Cuerno, Nuevo,* 11. *Ue.* *Fuego, Huélgo, Nuéz, Vihuela.*

The Twelue in *ui*, and *uy*, where *u* is more sounded then the *i*, as *Muy, Fuy, Cuidádo, Húyo.* 12. *Ui, uy.*

Fower Rules following shewing how euery vowell maketh a  
seuerall syllable by himselfe, or is sounded  
in diphthong with another.

### *The first Rule.*

If betwene two bowels come *h*, or a consonant, such bowels cannot ioyne themselves together to make a syllable or diphthong, as *Ahínco, Bolár*, except *Auré, Aurás, Aurá, Aurémos, Auréys*, where *u* and the bowell make a syllable, the like in *Auria, Auriamos.* *The first Rule.*

### *The second Rule.*

If two bowels coming together, neither of them being *i* nor *u*, make two syllables, as *Néemias, Posséer, Roér*, except these Hebrew words which end in two *ee*, as *Osee, Bethleem, Bersabee.* *The second Rule.*

### *The third Rule.*

When the first person of a verbe doth end in two bowels, and the first bowell being *i*, and the accent stand vpon the same *i*, then that *i* maketh a syllable of it selfe without ioyning it selfe with the bowell following, as *Embio, Embias, Embia, Embiámos.* *Porfio, Porfias, Porfian.* *Elpio, Elpias, Elpian.* *Confio, Confias, Confia.* *The third Rule.*

### *The fourth Rule.*

But if the word doth end in two bowels, and the first of them being *i*, and the accent not on the first, then they make both the bowels a diphthong into a syllable, as *Grácia, Justicia, Daniél, Ezechiél, Gabríel, Senténcia, Vuória*, and in like sort doe they when they haue the accent on the last of them, as *Passión, Religión, Nación, Caución, Ración*, because they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the *Antepenultima*, therefore must the Spanish haue it in the *Ultima*. Except these words in Spanish, *Anciano, Dioclesiano, Diáblo.* *The fourth Rule.*

## Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is a sounding of three bowels into one syllable with one breath together, and that after five sortes.

The first in *iai* or *yay*, as *Vayáys, Espaciáys*, where *i* is heard more then *a*.

The second *iey* or *yey*, where *e* is more sounded then *i*, as *Enluziéys.*

The third in *iue* or *yue*, where *e* is heard more then *u*, as *Hoyuélo, Arroyuélo.*

The fourth in *uai* or *yay*, as *Guáy.*

The fifth in *uei* or *yey*, as *Buéy, Buéyre.*

*Definition of a Triphthong.*

1. *iy, yay.*

2. *iey, yey.*

3. *iue, yue.*

4. *uai, uay.*

5. *uei, uey.*

Of



## Of Prosodia or Accents, the seconde part of this Grammar.



**A** Orthographie handleth letters, so Prosodie treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable of woꝝde long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner can not tell how to read or pronounce the tongue, much lesse to be understood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not onely disgraced, but be driven to bestow longer time, in forgetting that all touch taken by, then he might be in going forward in learning five times so much. The which being carefully looked vnto at the first, cannot but much adorne the speaker, make himselfe vnderstood, as also giuing himselfe exceeding comfort in going forward, when he knoweth he singeth true harmonie, which cannot but delight those that will listen thereto.

*Description of Prosodia.*

*Spanish not subject to Latine accents.*

*Of the Latine, the Latine accent.*

*Words ending in D, I, N, or R, accented in the last syllable. Except these. Nota. Opus laboris.*

Prosodia, is a rule of knowledge, shewing with what accent euery syllable of a woꝝde is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcél a prison.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tongue to be subject to the Latine accents, seeing it is for the most parte deriued from the same, but common speech and vse shewe the contrarie in manie woꝝdes, as Latín *Génesis*, in Spanish *Genesis*, *Sódoma*, in Spanish *Sodóma*, *Hélena*, *Heléna*, so in Latine *amor*, in Spanish *amór*, *áuror*, *aurór*, *Cérasus*, *Cerézo*. But yet note this, that woꝝdes deriued of the Latine do keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names of woꝝdes ending in d, l, n, or r, as *Abstinencia*, *Abstinencia*, *Obediencia*, *Obediencia*, *Beneficio*, *Blánde*, *Cadúco*, *Ceremonia*, *Cúlpa*, *Digno*, *Dóte*, *Familia*, *Fecóndo*, *Furióso*, *Prémio*.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as *Amistád*, *Pestilencial*, *Camelón*, *Pastór*.

Except some few ending in l, n, s, r, *ángel*, *ábil*, *apóstol*, *ábol*, *jóven*, *lóor*, *ánfar*, *ámbar*, *acibar*, *acúcar*, *acófar*, *alcázar*, *nácar*, *tíbar*, *cármén*, *cáncer*, *carácter*, *cárcel*, *Cristóval*, *cónsul*, *crímen*, *débil*, *defícil*, *móvil*, *inmóvil*, *fócil*, *dócil*, *Estéril*, *estéril*, *fácil*, *Dátil*, *frágil*, *ytil*, *inútil*, *fértil*, *inábil*, *mátil*, *mágen*, *mártir*, *mármol*, *Trébol*, *órden*, *orígen*, *virgen*, *exámen*, *volúmen*, *imágen*, *betúmen*, *Estévan*, and verie fewe or none besides these, for that in setting these downe I ran ouer (as nere as I couide) euery woꝝd in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may coniecture, what paines, trouble, & time, such books of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can come forth to them to the learner in a moment, that which the composer can hardly finde out in a moneth: but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the woꝝdes generally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoever to make the beginner, and also the well read to be perfect in the pronounciation, without which he shall be derided, as not vnderstood when he readeth or speaketh.

All Rhoumes in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as *Ocasión*, *Predicador*, so also in i, s, z, as *Alcauí*, *Corrés*, *Pertináz*, *Cerviz*, except *Adives*, a beast in Barbarie like a foxe, which barketh and crieth in the night as loud as a foxe.

*2 Accents in one woꝝde.*

Although in the Latine there is in no woꝝde but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish often are two found, as *Ciértaente*, *Fuértaente*, wherefore I will set downe the order of the Spanish accenting, first giuing example of those woꝝdes which continually are accented, then of those which are sometimes, and sometimes not; last of al, those which haue two or thre accents.

These woꝝdes alwaies accented, as

Hé há  
yá fr  
aquí acá  
séd sóy  
cál bóz  
grán áy  
Augustín acullá.

These woꝝdes following sometime accented, sometime not, as

**Al**, If it be an article, it is not accented, as *Dezid al Señor esto*, Tell your master this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as *Penlád en ál*, Think on some thing.

**Aun**, When que followeth it is not accented, as *Pédro aunque sepa morir no hará*, Peter although he knew he should die, he would not doe it. But alping a question it is then accented, as *Aún duérmes Pedro?* Doe you sleepe yet Peter?

**Ante**, Being a Preposition is not accented, as *Ante Dios clámas*, We stand before God. But being an *Aduerbe* it is accented, as *Anté vino Pédro que Juárez*, Peter came before John.

Cerca;

- Cerca*, a Preposition not accented, as *Cerca* todos dá buén exemplo, *I* boue all giue good example. But if it be a Verbe, *I* duerbe, or *Proue* or this particie *De* going befoze or following, then it is accented, as *El Rey* cerca con su gente, que tiene, cerca de sí, la ciudad y la rodéa cerca toda, y tiene la cerca de piedra, y de cerca parece fuerte, *The king* doth besiege with his people, which he hath about him, the citie, and compasseth it all about, nere vnto it, which hath his wall of stone, and nere hand it seemeth strong.
- Demi*, *I* possessiue not accented, as *De mi* padre heredé virtud, *Of my father I* inherited vertue. But if it be not a possessiue it is accented, as *De mi* habláys segun véo, *You* speake of me as *I* perceiue.
- Del*, *The article* not accented, as *Del virtuoso* es la virtud amada, *Vertue* is beloued of the honest. But if it be a *Pronoune* it is accented, as *Dios* és bueno y dél nos viene el bien, *God* is good, and from him cometh goodnes.
- Do*, *Spoken indefinitely* not accented, as *Do* estuviere el bueno estaré yo, *Where the good man* shall be, there will *I* be also. But *spoken in asking a question* it is accented, as *Dó* está Juan? *Where is John?*
- El*, *Being an Article* not accented, as *El bueno* teme a Dios, *The iust* feareth God. If it be a *Pronoune* then accented, as *Cristo* nos ama y él nos redimió, *Christ* loueth vs, and he it is that hath redeemed vs.
- Entre*, *A Preposition* not accented, as *Entre* los santos desseo estar, *I* desire to be among the godly. But *being a Verbe* is accented, as *Entré* Pedro y no Juan, *I* et Peter enter and not John.
- Mas*, *The Coniunction* not accented, as *No* hagáis mal, mas hazed bien, *Doe* not euill but doe good. But *being an I duerbe*, then it is, as *Más* quiero bive, &c. y es más querido, *He* liueth more at quiet, &c. and is better beloued.
- Medio*, *In composition* not accented, as *Medio* en burlas, medio en veras, *Halfe* in iest, halfe in earnest. If alone, then otherwise, as *Tené* el medio en cosas, *Kepe* a meane in matters.
- Nos*, *Not* accented, as *Hábla* nos Jesus, *Christ* telleth vs. But if it be a *nominatiue case* to the verbe, then it is, as *Nós* queremos, *We* will, &c.
- Vn*, *Not* accented, as *Vn* hombre, *I* man. But if y the *Coniunction* goe befoze, then it is, as *Dí* le pan, y ún real, *I* gaue him bread and six pence.

*These words following not accented, as*

*Alo*, *Alos*, *Aunque*, *Con*, *De*, *Dela*, *Delo*, *Delas*, *Delos*, *De mis*, *Desde*, *Desque*, *Don*, *Dofia*, *E*, *En*, *En mis*, *Enlo*, *Enlos*, *Enla*, *Enlas*, *Fray*, *Y*, *Lo*, *Le*, *Me*, *Micer*, *Mossen*, as *Micer* sancho, y *Mossen* Pedro vienen, *Master* *Sanches* and *Master* *Peter* comes. *Ni*, *Os*, *Pero*, *Pues*, *Por*, *Quan*, *Quel*, *San*, *Si*, *Su*, *So*, *Tan*, *Tal*. Also all the *Articles* while they keepe the nature of *Articles*, which are these,

*A*, *al*, *ala*, *alo*, *alas*, *alos*,  
*Del*, *dela*, *delo*, *delos*, *delas*,  
*El*, *la*, *las*, *Lo*, *los*, *le*, *les*.

### Words of two Accents.

*A*tramente, *H*arrobásta, *B*uénamente, *B*iénditamente, *C*iértamente, *B*ienaventuradamente, *D*íe- *Words of two*  
*stramente*, *G*ráuemente, *G*rafiosamente, *Y*guálmente, *J*untamente, *L*uengamente, *M*agnificamente, *R*a- *Accents*,  
*zonáblemente*, *R*áramente, *S*abiamente.

### Words of three Accents.

*M*uy malamente, *M*uy buénamente.

*Words of three*  
*Accents.*

## Of Etymologie and the Nowne.

Definition of  
Etymologie.



*Etymologie*, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descendance of words is considered in diuers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoeuer, this is so necessarie, that without it, they could not vnderstand or learne it: The which by the Latine Grammarians hath bene, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nownes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spanish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latin.

{ Nowne,  
 Pronowne,  
 Verbe,  
 Participle. } declined.
 { Aduerbe,  
 Coniunction,  
 Preposition,  
 Interiection. } vndeclined.

## Of the Nowne.

Primitive.  
Derivative.

Nownes be deuided into Substantiues and Adiectiues, which are likewise deuided into Primitiues, Deriuatiues.

The Primitiue, which is not deriued of any other, but is *Primū*, of himself, as *Abéja*, a bee.

The Deriuatiue, is drawen from the Primitiue, as *Abejonázo*, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitiue nownes, are these Interrogatiues, Redditiues, and Numerals following.

Interrogatiue.

To the Primitiue, these following, and the like are subiect, as

The Interrogatiue, as *Quién?* who? *Qual?* what manner? *Quánto?* how much? *Quántos?* how many.

The Relatiue which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as *tal*, such a one, *Tantos*, so many.

Numerall.  
Cardinall.

The Numerall to which these kinds following do belong, as

Cardinal, from which as from a fountaine the rest do spring, these do I wish the learner to haue by hart.

Cardinall  
Numerals.

1	vno	21	veinte uno	1500	mil y quinientos
2	dos	22	veynte dos, &c.	2000	dos mil
3	tres	30	treyntra	3000	tres mil
4	quátro	40	quarénta	4000	quátro mil
5	cinco	50	cinquénta	5000	cinco mil
6	seýs	60	sesénta	6000	seýs mil
7	siéte	70	seténta	7000	siéte mil
8	ócho	80	ochénta	8000	ócho mil
9	nuéve	90	novénta	9000	nuéve mil
10	diéz	100	cién, or cién to	10000	diéz mil
11	ónze	101	cién to y vno	100000	cién mil
12	dóze	200	docientos y dozién to	1000000	millón
13	tréze	300	trezién to	2000000	dos millónes
14	catórze	400	quatrocién to	3000000	tres millones
15	quínze	500	quinién to		
16	diés y seýs	600	seýscién to		
17	diéz y siéte	700	siétecién to		
18	diéz y ócho	800	ochocién to		
19	diéz y nuéve	900	nuéve cién to		
20	véyn te	1000	mil		

Ordinall  
Numerals.

The ordinalls, which declare the order of a place or time, as *Priméro*, segúndo, *tercéro*, *quárto*, *quinto*, *séxto*, *séptimo*, or *seténo*, *octáuo*, *nóno*, or *novéno*, *décimo*, or *dezéno*, *onzéno*, *dozéno*, *trezéno*, *catorzéno*, *quínzéno*, *décimo séxto*, *décimo séptimo*, *décimo octáuo*, *décimo nóno*, *veinténo*, *veinténo uno*, *veinténo dos*, &c. *Treinténo*, *quarenténo*, *cinquenténo*, *sesenténo*, *setenténo*, *ochenténo*, *noventéno*, *centésimo*, or *cienténo*, *doscienténos*, *trezenténos*, *quaticienténos*, *quinienténos*, *seýscienténos*, *siétecienténos*, *ochocién to*, *nuevecienténos*, *milésimo*.

Partatiues



Particulars, as Algúno, some bodie.

Partitive  
numerals.  
Univerſall  
numerals.  
Particular  
numerals.  
Adverbial  
numerals.

### Materials.

### Derivatives.

*Of countries  
or townes.*

*Of the nation.*

*Derivatives  
from Primi-*

Excessiveness in  
údo. ex úzo.

*Diminutives.*

### Numbers.

1997

*Note.*

Cases.

English

*Genders.*

Rules to know  
the gender of  
most part of

*Nounes.*

*Nota.*

Nouns in 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840,

r, Masculine.

Names of  
trees com=  
monly the  
Masculine  
gender, and  
the fruits the  
feminine, as

El Perál, a Pearre tree.  
El Ciruelo, a Plum tree.  
El Naranjo, an Orange tree.  
El Cidro, the Citron tree.  
El Manzano, the Apple tree.  
El Camueso, the Phippen tree.  
El Cerézo, the Cherrie tree.  
El Alméndro, the Almond tree.  
El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree.  
El Castaño, the Chestnut tree.  
El Nogal, the Wallnut tree.  
El Azeituno, the Olive tree.  
El Olivo, idem.  
El Morál, the Mulberry tree.  
El Granádo, the Domgranat tree.

La Péra, the Pearre.  
La Ciruela, the Plum.  
La Naranja, the Orange.  
La Cidra, the Citron fruit.  
La Manzana, the Apple.  
La Camuesa, the Phippen.  
La Ceréza, the Cherrie.  
La Almendra, the Almond.  
La Avellana, the Hazell nut.  
La Castaña, the Chestnut.  
La Nuez, the Wall nut.  
La Azeituna, the Olive.  
La Oliva, idem.  
La Móra, the Mulberie fruit.  
La Granada, the Domgranate.

Exception.

Except these whose tree  
and fruite are both  
Masculine, as

El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruite.  
El Limon, the Limon tree and fruite.  
El Alvéchigo, the Spicocke tree and fruite.  
El Avercôque, idem.  
El Péro, the tree and fruite of a kinde of Apple, very rawe,  
and cold by nature, good to roske, red on one side.

Another ex=  
ception.

Except these also whose  
fruit is the Masculine  
tree the feminine, as

El Higo, the Fig. La Higuera, the Fig tree. (tree.  
El Daul, the Date. La Palma, the Date tree or Palme  
El Razimo, the bunch of grapes. La Parra, the Vine, or La vid.

Verbals in or  
make them=  
felines feminine,  
by putting to a.

Verbals in or are of the masculine gender, and make themselves feminine, by putting to  
a, as Habladór, a prater, Habladóra, a she prater.  
Likewise Nounes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrado, honored,  
Honrada: Suégro, a father in law, Suégro, a mother in law.

### Of Declensions and of the Article.

Declension of  
the Article.

The Spanish (as likewise the Italian and French) haue but one manner of Declen=  
sion or declining, that is with the Article, which in Spanish is thus declined:

Article mascu= line Sing.	Rom. el.	Plu.	Rom. los.
	Gen. del, de lo.		Gen. de los.
	Dat. Para el, Para lo.		Dat. para los.
	Acc. a el, al, alo.		Acc. a los.
	Ab. del, delo.		Ab. de los.

### The Feminine Article thus.

Article femi= nine Sing.	Rom. la.	Plu.	Rom. las.
	Gen. de la.		Gen. de las.
	Dat. para la.		Dat. para las.
	Acc. a la, ala.		Acc. a las.
	Ab. de la.		Ab. de las.

In the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article Masculine is put oftentimes in  
steede of the Feminine, when the word beginneth with a vowel, as el agua, the water, el alma,  
the soule: to make the pronunciation more sweete *Euphonia gratia*, and it may also be put la agua, la  
alma.

Also in the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article is neuer separated from  
Nounes Appellatiues, neither in Singular nor Plurall number: as Spanish, el libro, los li=  
bros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nounes proper it is not used so: for it were  
absurd to say, el Francisco, la Juana: neither is it used with this word Dios, except there be ioyned  
with it some *Ephitheta*, as el Dios todo poderoso, God almighty.

Nota.

Declining



## Declining of a Nowne.

All nounes are thus de- clined, Sing.	{	Singular	{	Plu.	{	Nom. el maestro.	Nom. los maestros.
						Gen. del maestro.	Gen. de los maestros.
						Dat. para el maestro.	Dat. para los maestros.
						Acc. a el, o, al maestro.	Acc. a los maestros.
						Abl. del maestro.	Abl. de los maestros.

The femi- nine gender thus, Sing.	{	Singular	{	Plu.	{	Nom. la doctrina.	Nom. las doctrinas.
						Gen. de la doctrina.	Gen. de las doctrinas.
						Dat. para la doctrina.	Dat. para las doctrinas.
						Acc. a la doctrina.	Acc. a las doctrinas.
						Abl. de la doctrina.	Abl. de las doctrinas.

Adiectives are declined like the Substantives both singular and plural number.

## Comparatives and Superlatives.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the Comparative degree bleth this particle Mas, as *Comparatives*. Mas diligente, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminish, they vse Menos, as Menos diligente, lesse diligent, Menos vil, lesse vile.

## The Superlative.

The Superlative is made of this particle Muy, as Muy iusto, verie iust: sometime with ex- *Superlatives*. aggerating & magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatives from nounes & Adiectives, as Illustrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissimo, most excellent, most humane, most beautifull.

## These following thus compared

Buëno, mejor, o, mas buëno.  
Malo, peor, muy malo.  
Grande, mayor, muy grande, o, Grandissimo.  
Chico, menor, o, mas chico, muy chico.  
Mucho, mas, muy mucho, o, muchissimo.  
Poco, menos, muy poco.

There be also Adverbes of qualitie which are used with Comparative & Superlative, as nounes whereof they come, as Muy mas elegantamente, much more eloquently, Muy mas discretamente, much more discretely. In like manner, Prepositions, as Detrás, behinde, mas Detrás, more behinde, muy Detrás, much behinde: Debáxo, beneath o, vnder, mas Debáxo, more below o, vnder, muy Debáxo, much vnder o, beneath.

## A Pronoun.

The Spanish Pronoun is as the Latine, like a Noun, and is used in rehearsing, of a proper name of Pro and Nomen, i. for the name and in speech is used therefore.

Pronounes are deuised into Primitiues and Deriuatiues.

The Primitiues are these, yo, tu, si, éste, aquéste, el, éste, aquél, el qual, que, quien, mismo, to *Primitiues*. which Mismo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe: si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitiues because they are Primi, first, and not deriued of others.

Primitiues deuised into Demonstratiues.

They are called Demonstratiues because they shewe a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, *Demonstratiues*. si, aquel, éste, el.

Relatiues as repeating o, hauing relation to some thing spoken before, as el, éste, que, *Relatiues*. quien, el qual.

Deriuatiues o Possessives; because they be deriued of the Primitiues and signifie pos- *Deriuatiues*. session, as belonging to some thing, as mio, o, mi: tuyo, o, tu: suyo o, su, nuestro, vuestro.

In Pronounes are chiefly to be noted, the Persons, because all Nounes and Partici- *Persons*. ples

ples be of the thirde Person, but Pronounes of all three Persons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the first Person, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the second: and all the rest whatsoeuer of the thirde Person, according to this rule. All Prounes, Pronounes, and Participles, be of the third Person, except yo and tu.

*The first person Yo, thus declined.*

Yo declined.

Sing.	Nom. yo.	} Plu.	Nom. nos, nosótro.	} Fem. Plu.	Nosótras,
	Gen. de mi.		Gen. de nos, de nosótro.		de nosótras.
	Dat. Para mi.		Dat. Para nos, para nosótro.		Para nosótras.
	Accu. a mi, a me.		Accu. a nos, a nosótro.		a nosótras.
	Abla. de mi.		Abla. de nos, de nosótro.		de nosótra.

Nota.

This Pronoun in the singular number serueth as well for the Masculine as Feminine gender, so in the Plurall doth Nos. But Nosótro onely to the Masculine, and Nosótras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in speech & writing bleth this Pronoun Nos with the first person Plurall of the Imperatiue mode, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Vámos Nos, let vs go: Dexámonos, for Dexámos Nos, let vs leaue.

From this Pronoun Primitiue are two other deriued, one from the singular number, as Mio, from yo, another from the Plurall number as Nuestro from Nosótro.

Mi, and Mio. Mio, Mia, in Latine *Meus, mea, meum*, in Italian *Mio, mia*, in French *Mon, ma*.

*Example.*

Mascul.			Fem.			Mascul.			Fem.		
Sing.	{	Nom. Mi, mio.	{	Mia.	{	Nom. Mis, mios.	{	Mias.	{	Mias.	
		Gen. de mi, de mio.		de mia.		Gen. de mis, de mios.		de mias.			
		Dat. Para mi, para mio,		para mia.		Dat. para mis, para mios.		para mias.			
		Accu. a mi, a mio.		a mia.		Accu. a mis, a mios.		a mias.			
		Abla. de mi, de mio.		de mia.		Abla. de mis, de mios.		de mias.			

The learner in the Spanish must note, the manner how the Spaniard bleth these Possessives, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, suyo: and when he ought to vse them in speech or writing, otherwise straight he will bewray himselfe in using vnproperly the tongue.

A rule when  
Mi, tu, su,  
and Mio, tuyo,  
suyo, are to be  
vsed.  
Nota.

Mi, tu, su, are still vsed, ioyned with another word, as Mi cavallo, my horse, not Mio cavallo: Tu pienfamento, thy thought, not Tuyo pienfamento: Su provécho, his profite, not Suyo Pro-

But when a question is asked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put absolutely and not ioyned, as Cuya es esta espada? whose rapier is this? Answer: Mia, tuya, suya, mine, thine, his: and not Mi, tu, su. De quien es este cuchillo? whose knife is this? Answer, Mio, tuyo, suyo: and not, Mi, tu, su. In like sort when they make a relation of a thing spoken of before, and are placed at the end of a sentence, clause or period, as este cavallo no es mio, mas de aquel que a mi lo dexó, para que yo fuesse a vna casa tuya: this horse is not mine but his that left it me, that I should ride to one of thy houses, and you cannot say, este cavallo es mi, que yo fuesse a vna casa tu.

These and many such like I wish the learner in the Spanish to marke diligently in authors as he reads.

S. added maketh Plurall number.

To make the Plurall number of Mi, Tu, Su, adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and so of other words whatsoeuer, as before of numbers in the Prounes.

This other deriued from the Plurall Nosótro is thus declined.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Nuestro, Nuestra.	Nuestra.	Plur.	Nom. Nuestros, de Nuestras.	Nuestras, de Nuestras.
	Gen. de Nuestro, de Nuestra.			Gen. de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	
	Dat. para Nuestro, para Nuestra.			Dat. para Nuestros, para Nuestras.	
	Accus. a Nuestro, a Nuestra.			Accus. a Nuestros, a Nuestras.	
	Ablat. de Nuestro, de Nuestra.			Ablat. de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	

*The second person Tú, thus declined.*

Second person,  
Tu.

		Mascul.		Fem.		
Sing.	Nom.	Tu,	Nom.	Vos Vosótro,	Nom.	Vosótras.
	Gen.	de Ti,	Gen.	de Vos de Vosótro,	Gen.	de Vosótras.
	Dat.	para Ti,	Dat.	para Vos para Vosótro,	Dat.	para Vosótras.
	Accu.	a Ti, a Te,	Accu.	a Vos a Vosótro,	Accu.	a Vosótras.
	Abl.	de Te,	Abl.	de Vos de Vosótro,	Abl.	de Vosótras.
		Plu.				

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard most ordinarily ioyneth to the Infinitiue mode of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Habláros, to speake vnto you, Véros, to see you, Dezáros, to tell you.

# Of Etymologie and a Pronoun.

17

Of this Primitive, likewise come two Derivatives, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Tuyo, in Latin *Tuus, Tua, Tuum*, Italian *Tuo, Tua*, French *Ton, Ta*. The other of the Plurall, Vos of Vuestros comes Vuestro.

Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Tu, Tuyo, Tuya.	Tuya.	Plur.	Nom. Tus, Tuyos, Tuyas.	Tuyas.
	Gen. de Tu, de Tuyo, Tuya.	Tuya.		Gen. de Tus, de Tuyos, Tuyas.	Tuyas.
	Dat. para Tu, para Tuyo, Tuya.	Tuya.		Dat. para Tus, para Tuyos, Tuyas.	Tuyas.
	Accus. a Tu, a Tuyo, Tuya.	Tuya.		Accus. a Tus, a Tuyos, Tuyas.	Tuyas.
	Abbl. de Tu, de Tuyo, de Tuya.			Abbl. de Tus, de Tuyos, de Tuyas.	

But note how the Spaniard and Italian accounteth it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person singular either in the Nominative Tu, or in other cases Ti or Te, except it be to his Preager, his slave, his lackie, his keeper, or to some of base & vile account. To their servants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons they speake in the seconde person Plurall, as Traed aqui, bring hither, &c. Yreys a mi capuero, you shal goe to my shoemaker, Direys que me haga unos boteguis, and you shall tell him that he make me a paire of buskins.

Nota, how the Spaniard useth Tu, and the second Plu.

To all others they use the third person, as Quiere V.M. andar, will your Mastership go? Ruéga a V.M. que me haga esta merced, &c. I intreat your Mastership that you doe me this curtesie, &c.

Nota.

And whereas Englishmen say You, the French *Vous*, the Spaniard and the Italian speake in the third person singular, as V.M. V.S. your Mastership, or worship.

Nota.

The other Derivative of the plurall number is this, Vuestro, of Vos or Vuestros, in Latine *Vester, Vestra, Vestrum*, in Italian *Vostro, Vostra*, French *Votre*, in English Yours.

Nota.

Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Vuestro, Vuestra.	Vuestro.	Plur.	Nom. Vuestros, Vuestras.	Vuestras.
	Gen. de Vuestro, Vuestra.	Vuestro.		Gen. de Vuestros, Vuestras.	Vuestras.
	Dat. para Vuestro, Vuestra.	Vuestro.		Dat. para Vuestros, Vuestras.	Vuestras.
	Accus. a Vuestro, Vuestra.	Vuestro.		Accus. a Vuestros, Vuestras.	Vuestras.
	Abbl. de Vuestro, Vuestra.			Abbl. de Vuestros, Vuestras.	

The third person Si, thus declined.

Si.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing. and Plural.	Nom. carer.		Of this Primitive one Derivative, which signifieth in Latin, <i>Suis, sua, suum</i> : Italian, <i>Suo, sua</i> : French, <i>Sien, siens</i> : English, <i>his, as</i> .		
	Gen. de si,				
	Dat. para si,				
	Accus. a si,				
	Abbl. de si,				

Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. su, Suyo, Suya.	Suya.	Plu.	Nom. sus, Suyos, Suyas.	Suyas.
	Gen. de su, Suyo, Suya.	Suya.		Gen. de sus, Suyos, Suyas.	Suyas.
	Dat. para su, Suyo, Suya.	Suya.		Dat. para sus, Suyos, Suyas.	Suyas.
	Accus. a su, Suyo, Suya.	Suya.		Accus. a sus, Suyos, Suyas.	Suyas.
	Abbl. de su, Suyo, Suya.			Abbl. de sus, Suyos, Suyas.	

Su, Suyo.

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them, because as I before saide: it is one of the difficultest things in the tongue to haue the true use of them, and whereby a stranger or the vnlearned in his speech or writing, shall soonest discover himselfe to the naturall or learned in the tongue. Wherefore let not onely the young learner; but also the well grounded, and those that are able to discourse and write the tongue well, obserue how and when these Pronounes following (so little differing the one from the other) are to be used in their due time and place, as followeth:

Nota the difference of these Pronounes following.

These two, Este and Aquéste, doe signifie vnto vs any thing that is nere vs, in that signification as the Latin, *Hic, haec, hoc*: in Italian, *Cotesto, Costesta, Costui, Costei, Questo, Questa*: in French, *Cestuy cy, Ceste cy, Ceci*: in English, *this heere, or this man heere*. They do differ thus.

Este, Aquéste.

Este and Aquéste, in Latin, *Hic, is he, or that which is nere or next to me.*

Nota.

Este, in Latin, *Iste, he or that, nere or next to thee.*

Este, Aquéste.

Aqué and El, in Latin, *Ille, is he, or that which is neither by me nor thee, but a part from both.*

Este.

Aqué, El.



		Example.			
		Mascul.	Fem.		
Este.	Sing.	Nom. éste,	ésta,	Plu.	Nom. éstos,
		Gen. éste,	ésta,		Gen. éstos,
		Dat. para éste, para ésta,	para ésta,		Dat. para éstos,
		Accus. a éste, a ésta,	a ésta,		Accus. a éstos,
		Abi. éste,	ésta,		Abi. éstos,

In the singular number of this Pronoun, the first wordes in e, as éste, éste, para éste, &c. are of the Masculine gender: the second, ésta, ésta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as éste, éste, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plurall, the first is the Masculine & Neuter: the other the Feminine gender.

Nota.

Aquél.

Este.

Mismo.

In the Genitive case, we say éste, and éstos, casting away the first e, *Euphonia gratia*, that it might sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de éste, de éstos.

Aquél, Aquésta, Aquésto, declined as in the example next above, and so is,

Este, Esté, Esto: in Latin, *iste, ista, istud*: the Italians and French have no proper words to expresse it, but must be circumlocution: in English, he or that, none or next to the.

Mismo, Misma, Mismo, declined after the same.

Aquel, El.

Aquel, and El: in Latin, *ille illa, illud*: Italian, *Quello, colui, quella, Colui*: French, *Celui iceluy, Cella, celle*, he or that which is neither more me nor thee, declined both alike.

Nota.

Note that this El, a Pronoun, and El the Article doe differ in declining, specially in the plurall number. This making Ellos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may see. I take the declining of the Article El before in the Rowne.

		Mascul.	Fem.	Neu.		
Sing.	Sing.	Nom. el,	ella,	ello.	Plu.	Nom. ellos,
		Gen. del,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Gen. d'ellos,
		Dat. para el, para ella,	para ella,	para ello.		Dat. para ellos,
		Acc. a el, a ella,	a ella,	a ello.		Acc. a ellos,
		Abi. d'el, d'ella,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Abi. d'ellos,

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard commonly useth this Pronoun Le before a Verbe thus, Le vino a la memoria, it came to his memorie: Le dixo, he told him: Que del alma le salia, which came from his soule: Dar le lo, to give him that: Le respondiô, he answered him.

Nota.

Also the Spaniard useth this Pronoun Le to open the Infinitive made of a verbe, by changing e of the Infinitive into i, *Euphonia gratia*, as Hablarle, to speake unto him, Hablarle: Oyrlle, to heare him, Oyrlle: Verle, to see him, Verle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latin *Qui, Qui, Quis, Quod*, in Italian, *Chi, Che, il Quale, La Quale*, in French, *Qui, Lequel, Laquelle*, in English, *Who, Which, Thus*.

Que, Quien.

Sing. and Plural.	Sing. and Plural.	Nom.	Qué.
		Gen.	de Qué.
		Dat.	para Qué.
		Accus.	a Qué.
		Abi.	de Qué.

In this same manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.		
Sing.	Sing.	Nom. el qual,	la qual,	lo qual.	Plu.	Nom. los quales,
		Gen. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Gen. de los quales,
		Dat. para qual, para la qual, para lo qual.	para la qual,	para lo qual.		Dat. para los quales,
		Accus. al qual, a la qual, a lo qual.	a la qual,	a lo qual.		Accus. a los quales,
		Abi. del qual, de la qual, de lo qual.	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Abi. de los quales,

Verbes.

## Of Verbes.

Verbe passiva.

The Spanish tongue hath the same kinde of Verbes, *Indes, Condes, Prunders* and *Verbes* as the Latine. But for the verbe passive, they make of the Verbe Soy, in Latine *Sum, es, fui*, and a participle, as *Amado, Leydo, Partido*, as *Soi Amado, Leydo, Partido*, I am loved, read, parted, or with this Accusative case or particle *Se*, with the third person active singular or plural, as *Se dize, it is saide, Se dizen, they are saide*, as hereafter in their place more at large shall be declared.

Gerunds.

Also they have the Gerund in Do in the same manner as the Latines, as *Amando, Leyendo, Oyendo*,



Oyendo, in Loning, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di, the Spaniard bleth the Infinitive mode and the preposition De, as De amár, of Louing. De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitive mode and the Preposition A, or the Infinitive mode of Soy with a Participle, as A amár, or Ser amado, to be Loved, A oír or Ser oydo, to be heard.

And in like manner their Supines. *Amatus*, they say A amár.  
Whereas the Latines say, *Amatu*, say, De ser amado.

Supines.

And for Participles of the Active voice, *Amans*, El que ama.  
For Participle of the Passive voice, *Amatus*, Lo que es amado.  
For Participle of the Future in *Rus*, *Amaturus*, El que ha o espéra de amár.  
For Participle of the Future in *Dus*, *Amandus*, Lo que ha de ser amado.

Participles.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly to the Reader appere.

## Of Coniugations.

The Spanish hath three coniugations, onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular.

- 1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirár, to behold: Hablar, to speake.
- 2 The second in er, as Perder, to lose: Caér, to fall.
- 3 The third in yr, or ir, as oír, to heare: Cumplir, to accomplish.

## Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicative mode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soever, alwaies endeth in o, Miro, I beholde, Hablo, I speake, Pierdo, I lose: Oygo, I heare.

## Indicative moode.

**Preterimperfect of the Indicative, of Verbes Regular, of the seconde and thirde Coniugation in ia, or ya, as** Perdiá, I did lose: Cayá, I did fall, &c. Ojá, I did heare, Complia, I did accomplish, &c. **And of the first coniugation all in áva, as** Miráva, I did behold: Habláva, I did speake.  
**First Preterimperfect in y, or i, as** oí, perdi, I haue heard, I haue lost: but of the first Coniugation all in é, as Miré, I haue beholde: Hablé, I haue spoken.  
**Second Preterimperfect of all the three Coniugations of all Verbes with this Verbe Hé, and the Participle, as** Hé mirado, I haue beholde: Hé leydo, I haue read: Hé oydo, I haue heard.  
**Preterimperfect thus, avia mirado, leydo, oydo, I had beholde, read, heard.**  
**Future, of the Indicative of all Verbes Regular, & Irregular in ré, as** Hablaré, I will speake: Leyré, oyaré, haré, podré, sabré, Daré.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the seconde & thirde Coniugation thus varied.	ia,	or	ya,	as	Perdiá,	as	oía,
		ias,		yas,		Perdias,		oías,
Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva: ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávás, habláva, hablávamos, hablávades, hablávan.	ia,	or	ya,	as	Perdiá,	as	oía,
		ias,		yas,		Perdias,		oías,
Cuerie	Future of the Indicative of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	re,	of first, seconde, and thirde, Coniugation in	ar,	hablaré,	by adding é long or accent to the Infinitive mode.		
		rá,		er,			perderé,	
Cuerie	Future of the Indicative of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	remos		ir,	oyré,			
		réys,						
Cuerie	Future of the Indicative of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	rán,						

The

## The Terminations of the Optative and Subiunctive.

Cueris	Present Tense of the Optative and Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present tense into e, thus,	e, es, e, emos, éys, en,	as	háble, hábles, háble, hablémos, habléys, háblen.
Cueris	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a,	a, as, a, ámos, ayís, án,		perda, perdas, perda, perdámos, perdáys, perdan,
Cueris	Pretierimperf. of the Optative & Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus,	ára, ria, ásse, áras, rias, ásses, ára, ria, ásse, áramos, riamos, ássemos, árades, riades, ássedes, áran, rian, ássen,		hablara, hablaría, hablásse, hablára, hablarías, hablásse, hablara, hablaría, hablásse, habláramos, habláramos, hablásemos, hablárades, hablárades, hablásse, habláran, habláran, hablásen.
Cueris	Pretierimperfect of the the Optative and Subiunctive of the second and thirde Coniug. thus,	éra, ria, ésse, éras, rias, ésses, éra, ria, ésse, éramos, riamos, éssemos, érades, riades, éssedes, éran, rian, éssen,		perdiéra, perdería, perdiésses, perdiéras, perderías, perdiésses, perdiéra, perdería, perdiésses, perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiésemos, perdiérades, perderíades, perdiéssedes, perdiéran, perderían, perdiéssen.

And these Pretierimperfect Tenses as all other of what Coniugation soever of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, forme two voices of themselves of the seconde person singular of the first Pretierperfect Tense of the Indicative mode, by taking awaie *Se*, and by making it in the first Coniugation, *ára*, and *ásse*, as of this seconde person of the Pretierperfect of the Indicative singular, *Revelásse*, commeth the Pretierimperfect of the Optative, and Subiunctive *Revelára*, *Revelásse*, and of the second and thirde Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that *se*, into *era* and *esse*, as of this Indicative mode *entendisse*, commeth the Pretierimperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, *entendiéra*, *entendiésses*, of *oyíste*, commeth *oyéra*, *oyésses*: of *diste*, *diéra*, *diésses*: of *estuviste*, *estuviéra*, *estuviésses*: of *anduviste*, *anduviéra*, *anduviésses*: of *pudiste*, *pudiéra*, *pudiésses*. And they forme the thirde voice of this Pretierimperfect by putting to *ia*, to the Infinitive mode, as of the Infinitive *revelar*, commeth this Pretierimperfect *revelaría*, of the Infinitive *entender*, *entendería*, of *oyr*, *oyría*, of *dár*, *daría*, of *estár*, *estaría*, and *ár*, *andaría*.

Cueris	Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus	áre, áres, áre, áremos, áredes, áren.	as	Hablaré. Hablarés. Hablaré. Hablarémos. Hablarédes. Hablarén.
Cueris	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	ére, éres, ére, éremos, éredes, éren.	as	Perdiére, Perdiéres, Perdiére, Perdiéremos, Perdiéredes, Perdiéren.
				Oyére. Oyéres. Oyére. Oyéremos. Oyéredes. Oyéren.

Now it remaineth to give a *Paradigma* or example of euerie Coniugation of their Modes, Tenses, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our Grammar, and without the which the learner shall neuer be able to write or speake but by ayme and rote, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

And

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the affinitie of these two tongues, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the Italian, that the vnderstander of both tongues, may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference, the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vñing the one for the other, or mixing them (a thing offensive to the Spaniards nature, as all knowe who haue trauelled in Spaine.) For euen as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe:

So if you see them both at one time, and in one place together, and take good hede of them by comparing them; no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discerne, know and call them: euen so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easily to discerne and remember them.

## Aver and Sér.

And because this verbe Aver, in Latine *Habere*, in Italian *Hauere*, in French *Avoir*, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine *Esse*, Italian *Essere*, French *Estre*, English to Be, doe serue to the coniugating or declining of all other verbes: They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this verbe Aver, which may fitly be called *Verbum auxilium*, a helpfull verbe, because he doth not onely helpe to decline himselfe in his owne preterperfect and preterpluperfect, but doth serue to decline all other verbes whatsoeuer in the same tenses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this verbe Sér, as befoze serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all verbes Passiues, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian or French can forme or decline their Passiues, as following you may perceiue.

The

**AVER**  
declined.

22

*The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe AVER in Italian*  
*Havere, in Latin Habere, in English to Have.*

**Indicative mode.**

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>			
Yo HE,	Io Ho & Heggio, Poetical.	Ego HABEO,	I have.
Tu ás,	tu Hai,	tu Habes,	thou hast.
Aquel á o há.	colui há, & háne, Poetical.	ille Habet,	he hath.
<b>Plural.</b>	<b>Plural.</b>	<b>Plural.</b>	<b>Plural.</b>
nosotros Avémos o Hémos	Noi habbiamo & haviémo,	Nos Habemus,	we have.
vosotros Avéys.	voi Havete,	vos Habetis,	ye have.
aquellos án o háñ.	coloro Hánno.	illi Habent.	they have.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>			
Avia,	Havéa & Havéa,	Habebam,	I had.
Avías,	Havéi,	habebas,	thou hadst, &c.
Avia.	Havéa & Havéa.	habebat, &c.	
<b>Plur.</b>	<b>Plur.</b>		
Aviamos,	Havéamo & haviémo,		
Aviades,	Havéate,		
Avían.	Havéano & haviéano.		
<b>First preter- perfect</b>			
úve,	Hébi,	Habui,	I have had, &c.
uviste,	havésti,	habuisti, &c.	
úvo o hávo o óvo,	hébbe.		
Uvimos,	Havémmo,		
uvistes,	havéste,		
Uviéron o háviéron o óvi-	hébbero.		

*Yo He, o have  
tu Has, o hast  
Aquel He, o has  
Nosotros Hemos  
Vosotros Havéis  
Aquellos Han*

*Yo He, o have  
tu Has, o hast  
Aquel He, o has  
Nosotros Hemos  
Vosotros Havéis  
Aquellos Han*

*Yo He, o have  
tu Has, o hast  
Aquel He, o has  
Nosotros Hemos  
Vosotros Havéis  
Aquellos Han*

*Yo He, o have  
tu Has, o hast  
Aquel He, o has  
Nosotros Hemos  
Vosotros Havéis  
Aquellos Han*

<b>2<sup>o</sup> Decid perfect.</b>	yo He, tu ás, aquel á o há.	Io Ho, tu Hai, colui ha,	Habui, habuisti, &c.	I have had, &c.
	nosotros hémos o avémos, vosotros aveys, aquellos án o háñ.	Avido noi habbiamo, voi havéte, coloro hanno.	havéto	
<b>pluper- fect tñle</b>	Avia, avías, avia.	Havéa, havéi, havéa.	Habueram, &c.	I had had, &c.
	Aviamos, aviades, avian.	Avido havéamo, havéate, havéano.	havéto	
<b>Futur</b>	Avré, Avrás, Avrá.	Haveré, haveré & haré, haverái, haverái & harái, haverá, haverá & hará.	Habebo, &c.	I shal or will have, &c.
	Avrémos, Avreys, Avrán.	Haverémo, haverémo & harémo, haveréte, haveréte & haréte, haveránmo, haveránmo & haránmo.		
<b>2. futur.</b>	Avrá tu, Avrá aquel, Avrámos nosotros, Avrá vosótroos, Avrá Avrá aquellos.	Habbi tu, habbi aquel, habbiámo noi, habbiáte voi, habbiámo coloro.	Habe, habeto, &c.	Have thou, &c.

The Spaniards use in stede of this Imperative mode, this word Ten of Tengo,  
I hold: which Tengo is often used of them for this verbe He.

This



This Imperative mode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly used for áyas, áya, is thus declined: **AVER** declined.

The Imperative of Tener, ordinarily used for the Im- perat. of AVER, to haue.	Tén tu.	Hold thou.
	Ténga aquel.	let him hold.
	Tengámos nosótroz,	Hold we, or let us hold.
	Tened vosótroz.	Hold ye.
	Tengan aquéllos.	Hold they, or let them hold.

The Optative mode is used with these signs, Oxalá, or else Ohi, or Plaguiése a Dios: in Latin, *Vivamus*: in Italian, *O Dio voglia*, *O che*, *Dio volesse che*, *O Dio che*: French, *Dieu vuelle*, *Pleust a Dieu*: English, *would to God*, *I pray God*, *God graunt*. The Potential like the Latin, with these signs, *May*, *can*, *might*, *would*, *should*, or *ought*: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potentiall alwaies make their future tense and Present tense alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reueale: future tense also, Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potentiall haue their future tenses al one with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

## Subiunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pref. Como. { áya, áyas, áya.	Quando { Hábia, Hábi, Hábia.	Cum { Habeam, Habeas, &c.	{ when I had. when thou hadst, &c.
{ ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	{ Habbiám, Habbiáte, Habbian.		

*auria deuotat  
tempus in  
huius tempus  
plurimum  
impert.  
huius tempus  
futurum.*

Como { auria, uuiéra, uuiése, aurias, uuiéras, uuiésses, auria, uuiéra, uuiése.	Quando { haueré, hauerá, hauerá, haueré, hauerá, hauerá, haueré, hauerá, hauerá.	Cum { habuerim, habueris, &c.	{ when I had, or did haue, &c.
{ auriamos, uuiéramos, uuiéssimos, auriades, uuiérades, uuiéssedes, aurian, uuiéran, uuiéssen.	{ hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébono, hauerébono, haueréssero.		

Or decline with H. Huiéra, Huiése, or Oviéra, Oviése.

Perfec. Como. { áya, áyes, áyas áya.	Quando { hábia, hábi, hábia.	Cum { habuerim, habueris, &c.	{ when I haue had, &c.
{ ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	{ habbiám, habbiáte, habbian.		

*Supra.*

Pluper. Como. { uuiéra, or uuiése, uuiéras, or uuiésses, uuiéra, or uuiése.	Quando { haueré, hauerá, hauerá.	Cum { habuerim, habueris, &c.	{ when I had had, &c.
{ uuiéramos, or uuiéssimos, uuiérades, or uuiéssedes, uuiéran, or uuiéssen.	{ hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébono, hauerébono, haueréssero.		

First future Como. { uuiére, uuiéres, uuiére.	Quando { haueré, hauerá, hauerá.	Cum { habuerim, habueris, &c.	{ when I shall haue here- after, &c.
{ uuiéremos, uuiéredes, uuiéren.	{ hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébono, hauerébono, haueréssero.		

Second

Yo habré  
tu habrás  
él habrá  
nos habremos  
vos habréis  
ellos habrán

apues le futur

24

# Declining of Verbes.

Second future Como	aure, aurás, aurá, auremos, aureys, aurán.	avido. Quando	haberé, habrás, habrá, habrémos, habréys, habrán.	habueré, habrás, habrá, habrémos, habréys, habrán.	habueré, habrás, habrá, habrémos, habréys, habrán.	When I shall have hereafter, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense

AVER ], Haveré, ] Habere, ] to have.

## Pluperfect tense

Avér avido, ] Haver habido, ] Habuisse, ] to have had.

## The future tense

Espéro de avér, { Douer haveré, } Habiturus esse, ] to have hereafter.

## Gerund

Aviendo, ] Havendo, ] Habendo, ] in having.

## Participle

Avido, ] Havido, ] Habitu, ] I had.

## Participle of the future tense

El que espéra de avér, ] Effere per haveré, ] Habiturus, ] to have hereafter.

SER

The other verbum Auxiliarium Sér, with which all Passives are declined: it is in Latin Sum, es, fui: in Italian Essere, to Bē.

## Infinitive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Yo SOY, tu eres, aquel es.	Io SONO, tu sei, colui è.	Sum, es, est.	I Am, thou art, he is, &c.
Plu. nosotros Somos, vosotros soys, aquellos són.	Plu. Noi siamo, voi siete, coloro sono.	Plu. Sumus, estis, sunt.	

Imperfect.	éramos, érades, éran.	éramo, & eravamo, eravate, erano.	eram, eratis, erant.	I was, &c.

First Preterperfect.	Fuí, fuiste, fue.	Fui, fosti, fui.	Fui, &c.	I have been, &c.

Second Preterperfect.	He, & uve, ás, & uviste, á, & uvo.	Sóno, sói, e.	Stato, &c.	I have been, &c.

Plu-perfect.	Avía, avías, avía.	éramos, eravamos, eravate, eramos.	Fui, &c.	I had been, &c.

future

# Declining of Verbes.

2  
25

Future	Seré, lerás, lerá.	Saró, & fia, sarás, sará & fia.	Ero, &c.	I shall or will be.
	Serémos, leréys, lerán.	Sarémo, saréte, saránno.		

## Imperative mode

Sé tu, or sey tu, séa aquél.	Sí, fia, & sic tu, fia, & sic colui,	Sí, ei, esto, sic, esto.	Be thou, Be he or let him be, &c.
Scámo noíotros, séa vosótro, séan aquéllos.	Siámo noi, siáte voi, siámo coloro.	Simus, siúu, & siúte, siúu, siúte.	

## Subiunctive mode.

*Imperative*  
2

Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres. Como yo SE' A, tu léas, aquél léa,  scámo, scáys, scán.	Quando lo S' A, tu s'í, fia, colui s'í, fia,  siámo, siáte, siámo, & siéno.	Cum sim, sit, &c.  When I am, &c.
<i>futura denotat</i> fuerá, lerá, fuéste, fuéras, lerás, fuésses, fuéra, lerá, fuésses, Como. fuéramos, lerámo, fuéssimos, fuérades, lerádes, fuéssedes, fuéran, lerán, fuéssen.	Quando sarei, fôssi, fússi, sarésti, fôssiti, fússiti, sarébbe, fôssite, fússite,  sarémmo, fôssimo, fússimo. saréste, fôssite, fússite, (fússero sarébbno, sarámo, fôssero,	Cum esset, &c.  When I was.
Preter. perfect. Como. áya, ayás, áya,  ayámo, ayáys, áyan,	Quando sia, siti, sia,  siámo, siáte, siámo.	Cum fuérin, &c.  When I have beene, &c.
<i>futura denotat</i> uiera, or uiéste, uieras, or uésses, uiera, or uiéste, Como. uierámo, or uiéssimos, uierades, or uiéssedes, uieran, or uiéssen,	Sido. Quando fôssi, saréti, fôssiti, sarésti, fôssite, sarébbe,  fôssimo, sarémmo, fôssite, saréte, fôssero, sarébbno,	Cum fuissim, &c.  When I had beene, &c.
First Futu. Como fuére, fuéres, fuére,  fuéremos, fuéredes, fuéren.	Quando saró, sarás, sará,  sarémo, saréte, saránno,	Cum fuero, &c.  When I shall be, &c.

D I

second

Seria denotat magis tempus futurum q alius tempus quis sit  
punctum in p'sentia Imperfecto.

3 *Après le futur*

second Futur. Como	} avré, avrás, avrà, avrémos avréys, avrán,	} Sido. Quando,	} seré, sarás, sarà, sarémos, saréys, sarán,	} stato. Cum sero, &c.	} When I shall be, &c.

## Infinitive mode, Present Tense.

SER,]	Effere,]	Esse,]	To be.
Interperfect and Imperfect.			
AVER sido,]	Effere stato,]	fuisse,]	To have bene.
Future Tense.			
Auer	{ donner effere,	{ fore,	To be here=
deser,	{ hauer ad effere,	{ futurum esse,	
after.			
Gerund.			
Siendo,]	Essendo,]	The Latine wants,]	In being.
Participle.			
SIDO]	stato,]	bone.	

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in  
AR, as Revelár] in Italian *Rivelare*] Latine *Revelare*]  
in English] to Reueale or discover, as Revelár,  
in Spanish is also as Rebelár, to rebell.

1. Coniug.  
of Regular  
Verbes in  
AR, RE-  
VELAR

## Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	{ yo REVELO, tu Revelás, aquel revelá,	{ IO RIVÉ LO, tu riveli, colui rivela,	{ Revelo, revelas, revelat, &c.	{ I reueale, Thou reuea- lest, &c.
	{ revelámos, reveláys, Revelán.	{ riveliámo, riveldáre, rivéliamo,		
Imper- fect.	{ reveláva, revelávas, reveláva,	{ riveldúa, riveldáni, riveldúa,	{ revelabam, &c.	{ I did reueale,
	{ revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	{ rivelauiamo, rivelauiáre, rivelduamo,		
First Pers.	{ revelé, reveláste, reveló,	{ riveldí, riveldíste, riveldó,	{ revelavi, &c.	{ I have reuen- ted, &c.
	{ revelámos, revelásteis, reveláron,	{ riveldámo, riveldáste, riveldáron, riveldáron, riveldáron, riveldár.		



## Declining of Verbes.

27

second Perf.	2 3 hé, o, úve, ás, o, uviste, á, o, uvo,	reveládo.	ho, há, há,	riueláto	reuelauí, &c.	I haue reuea= led, &c.
	avémos, o, uvimos avéys, o, uvistes, án, o, uviéron,		habbiámo, habbiáte, hánno,			
Plu= perfect.	avía, avias, avía,	reveládo.	hauéua, hauéui, hauéua,	riueláto	reuelaueram, &c.	I had reuea= led, &c.
	aviámos, aviades, avian,		hauenámo, hauenáte, hauénano,			
Futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará,		riuelaré, riuelarái, revelará,		reuelabo, &c.	I shall o, will reueale, &c.
	revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarán,		riuelarémo, riuelaréte, riuelarámmo,			

Oftentimes for the Future of this Indicative Mode, as well of this first Coniugation, as of al the rest, is used the Infinitive Mode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Avér, with a Participle going betweene them, as Revelár lo hé, Revelár lo há, Revelár lo á. And so of the other Coniugations, as Entendér lo he, Entendér lo ás, o, yr lo hé, o, yr lo há, &c.

## Imperative mode.

revéla tu, revéle aquel., Plu. revelémos nosótro, reuelád vosótro, revélan aquéllos,	riuelatu, riueli colái, riuelámo noi, riueláte voi, riuelámo colóro,	reuelá, reueláto reueler, reuelato reuelemus, reuelatu, reuelent.	Reueale thou, be thou reuea= led, &c.
---	--	---	---

## Subiunctive mode with ligues, Si, Como, o, other Coniunction.

Pres. Como	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	when I doe Reueale, &c.
	Yo Revéle, tu Revéles, aquel Revéle. Plurall. Revelémos, Reveléys, Revélen.	Io Riueli, tu Riueli, colái Riueli. Quando Plurall. Riuelámo, Riueláte, Riuelámo.	Cum Reuelem, &c.	
Imper fect. Como	Reuelára, reuelaría, reveláffe, Reveláras, reuelarias, reveláffes, Revelára, reuelaría, reveláffe, Reveláramos, reuelariamos, reveláffemos Revelárades, reuelariades, reveláffedes, Reveláran, reuelarian, reveláffen.	Quando Riueláffi, riuelaréi, riuelaría, Riueláffi, riuelaréffi, Riueláffe, riuelarébbe, riuelaría, Riueláffimo, riuelarémmo, Riueláffe, riuelaríffe, Riueláffero, riuelarébbomo, riuelaríano	Cum Reuelarem, &c.	when I did Reueale, &c.  perfect.

Q. & A. m.  
m. & A. m.  
& A. m.

*revelara*  
*revelaray*  
*ut supra in*  
*per. missat.*

perfect. Como	{ aya, ayas, aya, ayamos, ayays, ayan. }	Revelado.	Quando	{ Habbia, Habbi, Habbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiano. }	Rivelato.	Cum	{ Revelaerim, or. }	{ when I have revealed, &c. }
1. <b>Plus perfect</b> Como	{ uviéra or uviéffe, uviéras or uviéffes, uviéra or uviéffe, uviéramos or uviéffemos, uviérades or uviéffedes, uviéran or uviéffen, }	Revelado.	Quando	{ Hauéffi, hauéffi, hauéffi, hauéffim, hauéffite, hauéffero, }	Rivelato.	Cum	{ Reuelassim, or. }	{ when I had revealed, &c. }
2. <b>First future</b> Como	{ Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Revelarémos, Reveláredes, Reveláren, }		Quando	{ Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno. }	Rivelato.	Cum	{ Reuelauero, or. }	{ when I shal or will Re- ueale, &c. }
3. <b>Secund Futur</b> Como	{ uviére or avré, uviéres or avrés, uviére or avrá, uviéremos or avrémos, uviéredes or avréys, uviéren or avrán, }	Reve- lado.	Quando	{ Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno, }	Rivelato.	Cum	{ Reuelauero, or. }	{ when I shal or will Re- ueale, &c. }

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Revelár, ] Rivelare, ] Reuelare, ] to Reueale or discover.

## Pluperfect tense.

Aver revelado, ] Haueré rivelato, ] Reuelauisse, ] to have Reuealed.

## The future tense.

Auér o Esperár  
de Revelár, { Douer Rivelare, Effere per } to Reueale  
{ Rivelare, Hauer a Rivelare, } hereafter.

## Gerund.

Revelando, ] Rivelando, ] Reuelando, ] in Reuealing.

## Supine of the Future signification.

a Revelár, ] a Rivelare, ] Reuelatum ] to be about to Reueale.

## Supine of the Passive signification.

De ser Revelado ] D'effere Rivelato ] Reuelatu ] to be Reuealed.

## Participle of the Present tense and Future voice.

El que Revela, ] Rivelante, ] Reuelans, ] Reuealing.

## Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.

Revelado ] Rivelato, ] Reuelatus, ] Reuealed.

All verbes which haue their Infinitives in A R, are declined in all points like this  
here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

## An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes

Regular in ER, as Entendér, in Italian Intendere,  
Latin Intelligere, to Understand.

2. Coniug.  
of Regular  
verbs in er  
Entendér.

## Judicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo ENTIENDO, tu Entiendes, aquel Entiende. <b>Plural.</b> Entendemos, Entendéys, Entienden.	{ Io Intendo, tu Intendi, colui Intende. <b>Plur.</b> Intendiamo, Intendete, Intendino.	{ Intelligo, &c.	{ I do Under- stand, &c.
Imper- fect.	{ Entendia, Entendias, Entendia.  Entendíamos, Entendiades, Entendian.	{ Intendéa & Intendéa, Intendéui, Intendéa & Intendéa,  Intenduíamo, Intenduíate, Intenduíano.	{ Intelligēbam, &c.	{ I did Under- stand, &c.
First perfect.	{ Entendí, Entendiste, Entendíó,  Entendimos, Entendistes, Entendieron.	{ Intéfi, Intendisti, Intéfi,  Intendimmo, Intendistē, Intéfero.	{ Intellexi, &c.	{ I have Un- derstood, &c.
Secōd perfect.	{ He o <sup>2</sup> uíve, ás o <sup>2</sup> uíste, á o <sup>2</sup> úvo.  hemos o <sup>2</sup> uívimos, avéys o <sup>2</sup> uístes, án o <sup>2</sup> uviéron.	{ H O hás ha  habbíamo hauéte hánno  Entendido	{ Intéxi, &c.	{ I have Un- derstood, &c.
pluper- fect tēse	{ Avía, avias, avía.  Aviámos, aviades, avian.	{ hauéa hauéui hauéa  hauuíamo hauuíate hauuíano  Entendido	{ Intellexeram, &c.	{ I had Un- derstood, &c.
Futur	{ Entenderé, Entenderás, Entenderá.  Entenderémos, Entenderéys, Entenderán.	{ Intenderó, Intenderái, Intenderá,  Intenderémo, Intenderéte, Intenderánno.	{ Intelligam, &c.	{ I shall o <sup>2</sup> will Understand.

## Imperative mode.

{ Entiende tu, Entiende aquel.	{ Intendi tu, Intenda colui,	{ Intellige, Intelligito. Intelligat, Intelligito.	{ Understand thou, Understand he o <sup>2</sup> let him Understand.
{ Entendámos nosotros, Entendéd vosotros, Entiéndan aquellos.	{ Intendíamo noi, Intendete voi, Inténdano coloro.		

1<sup>st</sup> Supra  
2<sup>nd</sup> futur

Entendér.

## Second Coniugation of Regular Verbes in ER, as ENTENDER.

## Subiunctive mode.

82

Spanish.

Italian.

Latine.

yo ENTIENDA,  
tu entiendas,  
aquel entienda,  
Plu.  
entendámos,  
entendáys,  
entiéndan.

yo INTENDA,  
tu intendi,  
colui intenda,  
Plu.  
intendiámo,  
intendiáste,  
intendiáno,

intel-  
ligam  
Gr.  
When  
I doe  
vnder  
stand.  
&c.

Imper-  
fect.  
Como.  
entendiéra, entenderia, entendiésses,  
entendiéras, entenderias, entendiésses,  
entendiéra, entenderia, entendiésses.  
entendiáramos, entenderiamos, entendiéssémos,  
entendiárades, entenderades, entendiéssédes,  
entendiéran, entenderían, entendiéssén.

Quando  
intenderai, entenderia, intendessi,  
intenderessi, entenderia, intendessi,  
intenderébbe, entenderia, intendessi,  
intenderémo, entenderiamos, intendéssimo,  
intenderéste, entenderíste, intendéssite,  
intenderébero, entenderían, intendéssero,

Cum  
intelli-  
gerem,  
Gr.  
When  
I did  
vnder  
stand.

áya,  
áyas,  
áya,  
Entendido.  
áyamos,  
áyays,  
áyan.

Quando  
hábbia,  
hábbi,  
hábbia,  
inteso,  
hábbiámo,  
hábbiáste,  
hábbiáno,  
intesi.

Cum  
intel-  
lex-  
erim,  
Gr.  
When  
I haue  
vnder  
stood,  
&c.

Plu-  
perfect.  
Como.  
uviéira, o, uviéisse,  
uviéiras, o, uviéisses,  
uviéira, o, uviéisse,  
uviéramos, o, uviéssémos,  
uviérades, o, uviéssédes,  
uviéiran, o, uviéssén,

Quando  
haueréi, & haueréisse,  
haueréste, & haueréisse,  
hauerébbe, & haueréisse,  
Entendido  
hauerémo, & haueréssimo,  
haueréste, & haueréssite,  
hauerébero, & haueréssero,

Cum  
intel-  
lexis-  
sem,  
Gr.  
When  
I had  
vnder  
stood.

First  
future.  
Como.  
entendiéres,  
entendiéres,  
entendiéres,

Cum  
intel-  
lexero  
Gr.  
When  
I shal  
vnder  
stande  
&c.

second  
future.  
Como.  
uviére, o, auré,  
uviéres, o, aurás,  
uviére, o, aurá,  
uviéremos, o, aurémos,  
uviéredes, o, auréys,  
uviéren, o, aurán,

Quando  
haueré,  
hauerái,  
hauerá,  
inteso.  
hauerémo,  
haueréste,  
haueréno,  
intesi.

Cum  
intel-  
lexero  
Gr.  
When  
I shal  
vnder  
stand.  
&c.

## Infinitive mode Present Tense.

Entendér, ] Intendére, ] Intelligere ] To vnderstand.

## Interperfect Tense.

aúer entendido, ] hauer inteso, ] intellexisse, ] To haue vnderstood.

## The future Tense.

aver o Esperár de entendér, ] daver intendere, ] intellectionum,  
] hauer ad intendere, ] to vnderstande  
] Effer per intendere, ] hereafter.

## Gerund.

entendiéndo, ] inendendoy, ] intelligendo ] In vnderstanding.

## Supines of the active voice.

a entendér, ] ad intendere ] intellectum ] To vnderstand.

## Supine of the passive voice.

de sér entendido, ] d'essere in teso, ] intellectu ] To be vnderstood.

Participle



## Declining of Verbes.

31

el que entiende,] <sup>intendente]</sup> Participle of the active voice and present Tense. Understanding.  
 entendido,] <sup>inteso]</sup> Participle of the Preter tense and passive voice. Understood.

All Verbes whose Infinitives end in er, are in all points declined like this except the irregular in er following.

An Example of the third and last Coniugation of Regular verbes <sup>3. and last</sup>  
 in Ir or Yr, as ABRIR, in Italian *Aprire*, Latin *Aperire*, to <sup>coniugation</sup>  
 Open, Oyr, Italian *Vdire*, Latin *Audire*, to Heare. <sup>of Verbes</sup>  
 Regular in <sup>Ir, or Yr.</sup>

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
OYO, y OYGO, óyes, óye.	OIO, odi, ode.	Audio, &c.	I doe Heare, &c.
Plur. oímos, oís, óyen.	Plur. vdiámō, vdiíte, ódomo.		
Oyá, oyás, oyá.	Vdiua, vdiui, vdiua.	Audiebam, &c.	I did Heare, &c.
Imper fect. oíamos, oíades, oían.	vdiuámō, vdiuíte, vdiuano.		
Oy, oyíte, oyó,	Vdi & vdií, vdiíste, vdi.	Audiui, &c.	I haue heard, &c.
First Perf. oímos, oístes, oyéron.	vdimmo, vdiste, (ro, vdir. vdirōmo, vdirōn, vdi-		
He, oíuve, ás, oíuiste, á, oíuvo,	Ho, hai, ha,	Audiui, &c.	I haue heard, &c.
Second Per= fect. ávemos, oíuimos, avéys, oíuístes, án, oíuieron,	Oydo. habbiámō, hauéto, hámmo,	Vdiito.	
avía, avias, avía,	hanéua, hauéui, hanéua,	Audieram, &c.	I had heard.
Plu= perfect. avíamos, aviades, avian,	Oydo. hauenámō, hauenáte, hauénano,	Vdiito.	
oyré, oyrás, oyrá,	vdiró, vdirái, vdirá,	Audiam, &c.	I shall oí will heare, &c.
future. oyrémos, oyréys, oyrán,	vdirémo, vdiréte, vdiránno.		

## Imperative mode.

Impe rative mode. Oye tu, oyga, oí óya aquel, oíamos nosotros, o' d vosotros, oyán, oí óyan aquellos,	odi tu, óda colui, vdiámō noi, vdiíte voi, ódanō coláro,	audi, audito, audiat, audito, &c.	Heare thou, Heare he oí let him heare, &c.
--	--	---	--

The

O Y R

*The Third and last Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, and YR.*declined. *Subiunctive mode*

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como.	O'Y A, o <sub>2</sub> óyga, óyas, o <sub>2</sub> óygás, óya, o <sub>2</sub> óyga,	Quando	O' D' A, ódi, óda,	Cum	Audiam, &c. When I hear.
	oyámos, o <sub>2</sub> oygámos, oyáys, o <sub>2</sub> oygáys, óyan, o <sub>2</sub> óygan.		rdiámo, rdiáte, óđano.		
Imper. Como	Oyéra, oyeria, oyéſſe, oyéras, oyerias, oyéſſes, oyéra, oyeria, oyéſſe.	Quando	rdiſſi, rdiréi, rderia, rdiſſi, rdiréſſi, rdiſſe, rdirébbe, rderia.	Cum	Audirem, &c. When I did hear, &c.
	oyéramos, oyriamos, oyéſſemos, oyérades, oyriades, oyéſſedes, oyéran, oyrian, oyéſſen.		rdiſſimo, rdirémo, rdiſſe, rdiréſſe, rdiſſero, rdirébbono, rderiano.		
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya.	Quando	Hábbia, hábbi, hábbia.	Cum	Audiuerim, &c. When I have heard, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan.		habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano.		
plupe. Como	Uviéra, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſe, uviéras, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſes, uviéra, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſe.	oído.	Hauéſſi, haueréi, haueria, hauéſſi, haueréſſi, hauéſſe, hauerébbe, haueria,	Cum	Audiuiſſem, &c. When I had heard, &c.
	uviéramos, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſemos uviérades, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſedes, uviéran, o <sub>2</sub> uviéſſen.		hauéſſimo, hauerémo, hauéſſe, haueréſſe, hauéſſero, hauerébbono, haueriano.		
First Future Como	Oyére, oyéres, oyére,	Cum		Cum	Audiuero, &c. When I ſhall hear, &c.
	oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren.				
Second Future Como	Uviére, o <sub>2</sub> auré, uviéres, o <sub>2</sub> aurás, uviére, o <sub>2</sub> aurá.	oído. Quando	Haueró, hauerái, hauerá.	Cum	Audiuero, &c. When I ſhall hear.
	uviéremos, o <sub>2</sub> aurémos uviéredes, o <sub>2</sub> auréys, uviéren, o <sub>2</sub> aurán.		hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.		

*Infinitive mode preſent tenſe*

OY'R, ]	Vdire, ]	Andire, ]	to Heare.
avér Oído ]	hauer Vdito, ]	Audiuiſſe, ]	to haue Heard.
<i>The Future tenſe</i>			
avér de Oír,	{ douer Vdire, hauer ad Vdire, Ceſſer per Vdire,	Auditum eſſe, ]	to Heare hereafter.

Gerund

# Declining of Verbes Passives.

33

Gerund.			
Oyendo, ]	Odendo, ]	Audiendo, ]	in Hearing.
Supine of the Active voice.			
a Oír, ]	Volere, ]	Audire, ]	to Hear.
Supine of the Passive voice.			
de ser Oydo, ]	desse Voluto, ]	Audire, ]	to be Heard.
Participle of the Active voice and Present tense.			
el que Oye, ]	chi Ode, ]	Audient, ]	Hearing.
Participle of the Passive voice and Preter tense.			
Oydo, ]	Voluto, ]	Audito, ]	Heard.

All verbes whose Infinitives end in ir, or yr, are declined in euerie respect like this : except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

## Of Verbes Passives.

The Spaniards as the Italian and French decline their Verbes passives with their Verbe Sum, es, fui, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of Revelar, to reueale: soy Revelado, I am reuealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passive of the first and third Coniugation of their Infinitive mode, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of Revelar, Revelado, Pedir, to require, Pedido, required, Oír, to heare, Oydo, heard.

But in the second Coniugation they take away r as before, and change the last e into y or i, and adde to do as aforesaide, as Leer, to read, Leydo: Entender, to vnderstand, Entendido.

### A Verbe Passive thus declined.

#### Indicative mode

	<b>Spanish.</b>		<b>Italian.</b>		<b>Latin.</b>		
Pres.	YO SOY,	} Revelado.	IO SONO,	} Riuelato.	Reuelor,	} I am Reuealed. thou art Reuealed.	
	tu és,		tu sei,		Reuelariu, &c.		
	Plu.	colui é,					
	Sómos,	Plu.					
	lós,	} Revelados.	Siámo,	} Riueláti.			
lón,	fete,		sono,				
Imper fect.	E'ra,	} Revelado.	E'ra,	} Riuelato.	Reuelabar,	} I was Reuealed thou wast reuea- led, &c.	
	éras,		éri,		Reuelabariu, &c.		
	era,	éra,					
	éramos,	erámo, & eranámo,					
	érades,	} Revelados.	eráte,	} Riueláti.			
éran,	éran,						
First perfect.	Fuy,	} Revelado.	Fui,	} Riuelato.	Reuelatus sum	} I have bene Re- uealed, &c.	
	fuéste,		fústi,		vel fui, &c.		
	fue,	fú,					
	fuyamos,	fúmo,					
	fuiestes,	} Revelados.	fúste,	} Riueláti.			
fueron,	fúrono, fúro, fúron,						
second Perfect	HE, or úve	} Revelado.	Sido,	} Sono	Stato,	} Reuelatus sum	} I have bene re uealed, &c.
	as, or uiviste		Sido,		fui		
	a, or úvo	Sido,	e	Stato,	ut antea, &c.		
	Hémos, or uivimos	Sido,	Siámo, Stati,	Reueláto.			
	avéis, or uivistes	} Revelados.	Sido,	} Riueláti.	fete		
an, or uivieron	Sido,		son		Stati,		

## Declining of Verbes Passives.

pluperfect.	Avia avias avia	Sido, Sido, Sido,	Revelado.	E'ra éris éra	Stato, Stato, Stato,	Rivelato.	Revelatus eram vel fueram, &c.	I had bene Revealed, &c.
	aviámos aviades avian	Sido, Sido, Sido,	Revelados.	erauámos erauádes éran	Stati, Stati, Stati,	Rivelati.		
future	Seré, serás, será,		Revelado.	Saré, sarás, sará,		Rivelato.	Revelabor, &c.	I shall or will be Revealed.
	Serémos, seréys, serán,		Revelados.	Sarémo, saréte, saránno,		Rivelati.		
Imperative mode								
	Sé tu, sea aquél,		Revelado,	Sia, & sy tu, sia, & se colui,		Rivelato.	Revelare, Reveletur, &c.	be thou Revea- led, let him be Re- vealed, &c.
	Seámos, sédes, séan,		Revelados.	siámo, siáte, siáno,		Rivelati.		
Subjunctive mode.								
Pres. Como	yo Séa tu séas aquel séa		Revelado.	lo Sia tu sy, sia colui sia, se		Rive- lato.	Renelar, &c.	When I am Revealed, &c.
	Seámos seáys séan		Revelados.	siámo siáte siáno & síno		Cum Rive- lati.		
Imper fect Como	Fuéra, sería, fuéfle fuéras, serías, fuéffes fuéra, sería, fuéfle		Reve- lado.	Fóffi, fúffi, saréi, saria fóffi, fúffi, sareffi, fóffe, fúffe, sarebbe, saria		Rive- lato.	Revelarer, &c.	When I was Revealed, &c.
	Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéffimos fuérades, seríades, fuéffedes fuéran, serían, fuéffen		Reve- lados.	fóffimo, fúffimo, sarémmo fóffe, fúffe, sareffe, fóffero, fúffero, sarebbomo, (sariano)		Cum Rive- lati.		
perfect. Como	A'ya Sido áyas Sido áya Sido		Revelado.	Sia Stato sy & sia stato sia & se stato		Rivelato.	Revelatus sim vel fuerim, &c.	whé I have been revea- led, &c.
	ayámos Sido ayáys Sido ayan Sido		Revelados.	siámo stati siáte stati siáno stati		Cum Rivelati.		
pluper- fect tñe Como	Uviéra or uviéfle uviéras or uviéffes uviéra or uviéfle	Sido Sido Sido	Reve- lado.	Fóffi, fúffi, saréi, saria stato fóffi, fúffi, sareffi stato fóffe, fúffe, sarebbe stato		Rive- lato.	Revelatus essem vel fuisset, &c.	whé I had been revea- led, &c.
	uviéramos or uviéffimos uviérades or uviéffedes uviéran or uviéffen	Sido Sido Sido	Reve- lados.	fóffimo, fúffimo, sarémmo stati fóffe, fúffe, sareffe stati fóffero, fúffero, sarebbomo stati (sariano)		Cum Rive- lati.		
futur Como	Fuére or uviére or avré fuéres or uviéres or avras fuére or uviéres or avra	sido sido sido	Reve- lado.	Saré stato sarái stato sará stato		Rivelato.	Revelatus ero vel fuero, &c.	When I shal be Revealed, &c.
	fuéremos or uviéremos or avrémos fuéredes or uviéredes or avréys fuéren or uviéren or avrán	sido sido sido	Reve- lados.	sarémmo stati saréte stati saránno stati		Cum Rivelati.		

Infinitive



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

35

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Ser Revelado,] *Revelari, effere Revelato,] Revelati,] to be Reuealed.*

### Dieter tense.

Avér Sido Revelado,] *Effere fto Revelato,] Revelatum esse vel fuisse,] to have been Reuealed.*

### Future tense.

Avér de sér *Doner effere Revelato,] Revelatum iri vel* to be Reuealed  
Revelado,] *hauer ad effere Revelato,] Revelandum esse,] hereafter.*

### Participle of the Present tense.

Lo que es Revelado,] *Revelato,] Revelatus,] that which is Reuealed.*

### Participle of the Future tense.

Lo que ha de ser *Hauendo ad effere Revelato,] Reue-* to be Reuealed  
Revelado,] *hauendo a Revelari,] landu,] hereafter.*

After this manner in euery respect all other verbes Passiues Regular of Irregular of what Coniugation soeuer are to be declined as of the second Coniugation Soy Vendido, Pofeydo, Defendido, and of the third Coniugation, as Soy Oido, Corregido, Seguido, and so of the rest.

Note that this Accusative case Se of the Pronoun ioyned with the third person of verbes Passiues, make them haue the Passive signification, as Dize, he saith, Se dize, it is said.

Nota.

Now will I handle and intreate of the verbes Irregular (in which is found hardness and difficultie to the learner for their declining) in such order and manner that he may with his ease or very little paine decline any of them whatsoeuer: for which purpose and for whose ease and profite, I haue to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and haue so diligently searched, that no one of them is defective to his vse (as I hope) shall be wanting, not here following set downe, that my labours may be answerable to my desire, and the learners profit to my paines.

## The first Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in AR, as DAR, in Italian and Latin Dare, to Giue.

1. Coniug.  
of Verbes  
Irregular  
in AR.

The verbes Irregular like as the Regular diuided into three Coniugations, the first in ar, the second in er, the third in ir or yr.

The verbes Irregular differ from the Regular afoze going in their first Dieterperfect of the Indicative, and Dieterimperfect of the Subiunctiue, as by the Examples following you may see.

Nota.

### Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo DOY,	Io DO,	Do,	I doe Giue, &c.
	tu Dás,	tu Dái,	Das,	
Plur.	aquel Da.	colui Da.	Dat, &c.	
	Damos,	Plur.		
Imperf.	Dáys,	Diamo or Dámo,		I doe Giue, &c.
	Dán.	Dáte,		
First	Dáya,	Dáyo,	Dabam, &c.	I haue Giuen, &c.
	Dávas,	Dáu,		
Perfect	Dáva.	Dáu,		
	Dávamos,	Dáu,		
	Dávades,	Dámo,		
	Dávan.	Dáu,		
	Dí,	Diedi & Dei,	Dedi, &c.	
	Diste,	Dissi,		
	Dió.	Diedo & Dette,		
	Dimos,	Démmo,		
	Distes,	Deste,		
	Diéron.	Diédro.		

Second

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Second Perfect	yo He tu ás aquel á.	Dádo.	Ho hai ba	Dato.	Dedi, &c. <i>vt supra.</i>	I have Given, &c. as next above.
	hémós aveys án		habbiámo hauete hámmo			
Imperf.	Avía Avias Avia	Dádo.	Havía hauéni hauéua	Dato.	Dederam, &c.	I had Given, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían		hauéuámo hauéuáte hauéuámo			
Future.	Daré, Darás, Dará.		Daré, Darás, Dará.	Dabo, &c.		I shall or will Give, &c.
	Darémos, Daréys, Darán.		Darémo, Daréte, Daránno.			
Imperative mode.						
	Dám, Dé aquel.		Da tu, Da colui.	Da dato, Des dato, &c.		Give thou, &c.
	Démos, Dád, Dén.		Diámo, Dare, Diámo.			

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	YO De, tu des, aquel De,	Quando	IO Dia, tu dia, colui dia,	Cum	Dem, &c. When I doe give, &c.
	démos, déys, dén,		diámo, diáte, diámo.		
Imperf. est.	diéra, daría, diéffe, diéras, darías, diéffes, diéra, daría, diéffe,	Quando	déffi, daréi, daría, déffi, daréffi, déffe, darébbe, daría,	Cum	Darem, &c. when I did give, &c.
	diéramos, daríamos, diéffemos, diérades, dariades, diéffedes, diéran, darían, diéffen.		déffimo, darémmo, déffe, daréffe, déffero, darébbemo, daríano,		
perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya,	Quando	hábbia, hábbi, hábbia,	Cum	Dederim, &c. When I have given, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, ayan,		habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiámo.		

Imperfect

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

37

Plus perfect. Como	} Dádo	Quando	} Dáto.	Cum	} When I had giuen, &c.
		uviéra, o3 uviéssé, uviéros, o3 uviéssés, uviéra, o3 uviéssé,  uviéramos, o3 uviéssémos, uviérades, o3 uviéssédes, uviéran, o3 uviéssén.		hauéssis, hauéssis, hauéssis, hauéssis, hauéssis, hauéssis,  hauéssimo, hauéssimo, hauésses, hauésses, hauéssero, hauésserónno,	
future, Como	} Quando	} Dáto.	Cum	} When I shall giue, &c.	
			diéramos, o3 diésses, diéramos, o3 diésses, diéramos, o3 diésses,  diéremos, o3 diéssémos, diéredes, o3 diéssédes, diéren.		hauéramos, o3 hauésses, hauéramos, o3 hauésses, hauéramos, o3 hauésses,  hauéramos, o3 hauésses, hauéramos, o3 hauésses, hauéramos, o3 hauésses,

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

DAR,] Daré,] Dare,] To giue.

## Preterperfect Tense.

avér Dádo,] { hauer dato, } To haue giuen.  
                  { dower dare, }  
                  { hauer a dare. } Dedíffe.

## Gerund.

Dando,] dando,] In giuing.

Participle of the Present tense, and Active voice.

El que da,] Dando,] Dando,] giuing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.

Dado,] Dado,] Dado,] giuen.

## Participle of the Future tense.

El que há, o3 espéra de dár,] Effers per dare ] Daturum esse ] to giue hereafter.

These here vnder written onely differ from the Regular verbes in the first preterperfect tense of their Indicative mode, which alway change Car of the Infinitive into que, and gar into gue, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Acercár, to come neere,	yo Acérco,	Acercué.
Cercár, to compass,	yo Cércó,	Cercué.
Cargár, to charge, to burden,	yo Cárco,	Cargué.
Achicár, to make little,	yo Achíco,	Achiqué.
Ahogár, to choake, to drowne,	yo Ahógo,	Ahogué.
Allegár, to come neere,	yo Allégo,	Allegué.
Ahorcár, to hang by,	yo Ahorco,	Ahorqué.
Anegár, to drowne,	yo Anégo,	Anegué.
Arrancár, to plucke by,	yo Arranco,	Arranqué.
Arremangár, to tucke by,	yo Arremango,	Arremangué.
Arriescár, to endanger,	yo Arriesco,	Arriescué.
Apesgár, to sweie downe,	yo Apésigo,	Apesgué.
Allulcár, to furrow,	yo Allulco,	Allulqué.
Bogár, to rowe,	yo Bógo,	Bogué.
Bolcár, to tumble downe,	yo Bólco,	Bolqué.
Castigár, to chastise,	yo Castigo,	Castigué.
Calcár, to kicke vnder fete,	yo Cáico,	Calqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo Cuéigo,	Colqué.
Cocár, to gape at, to mocke,	yo Cuéco,	Coqué.
Cavalgár, to ride,	yo Caváigo,	Cavalgué.
Chocár, to tucke,	yo Chuéco,	Choqué.
Denegár, to denie,	yo Deniégo,	Denegué.
Derrocár, to throwe downe,	yo Derruécó,	Derrogué.
Descolgár, to vnhang,	yo Descuélgo,	Descolgué.
Desfogár, to coole,	yo Desfuégo,	Desfogué.

c 1

Embarcár

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Embarcár, to embarke,	yo Embarco,	Embarqué.
Desligár, to untie,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embaúco,	Embaugué.
Embocár, <i>idem</i> ,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desnegár, to recant,	yo Desniégo,	Desnegué.
Enarcár, to cheat by,	yo Enarco,	Enarqué.
Divulgár, to publish,	yo divulgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiego,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame,	yo Fabrico,	Fabriqué.
Encenegár, to hurt,	yo Encienégo,	Encenegué.
Fregár, to rub,	yo Friego,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Huégo,	Holgué.
Mancár, to want,	yo Mánco,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juégo,	Jugué.
Marcár, to marke,	yo Márcó,	Marqué.
Mercár, to buie,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Mascár, to chew,	yo Máscó,	Malqué.
Mendigár, to beg,	yo Mendigo,	Mendigué.
Navegár, to saile,	yo Navégo,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to graunt,	yo Otórgo,	Otorgué.
Peliscár, to pinch,	yo Pelisco,	Peliqué.
Pagár, to pay,	yo Pago,	Pagué.
Pelcár, to filh,	yo Pélco,	Peliqué.
Plegár, to fold,	yo Pliégo,	Pliegué.
Regár, to water,	yo Riégo,	Regué.

These here above and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in as afore going, as Juzgár, to iudge, the Indicative present Tense Juzgo, I iudge, Preterimperfect Juzgava, first Preterperfect Juzgué, the second Perfect He juzgó, the Preterpluperfect avia Juzgado, future Juzgaré. Imperative Juzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Ojalá o: Si Juzgue, the Preterimperfect Tense Juzgara, juzgaria, juzgasse, Perfect aya juzgado, Pluperfect uviéra o: uviéssé Juzgado, future Juzgare. Infinitive Juzgar, Participle Juzgando.

## ESTAR

Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in AR, as Estár,]  
in Italian *Essere*, in Latin *Esse*,] To be, to stand.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	YO ESTOY, tu estás, aquel está,  estamos, estáis, están.	IO STO, tu stái, colui stá,  stamo, státe, stanno.	Sto, &c.	I stande, o: I am, &c.
Imper- fect.	estáva, estávas, estáva,  estávamos, estávades, estávan.	stáva, stávi, stáva,  stávamo, stávato, stávano.	stábam, &c.	I was o: did stande, &c.
first Perf.	estúve, estuviste, estuvo,  estuvimos, estuvistes, estuvieron.	steti, & steti, steti, steti,  stemo, steste, stetero.	steti, &c.	I have bene, o: have stode, &c.

second



second Per- fect.	yo Hé, tu ás, aquel há,	} Estádo.	<i>sono,</i> <i>se,</i> <i>é,</i>	} Stato. <i>steti, &amp;c.</i> <i>vs supra</i>	} I have bene, or have stood, &c.
	hemos, avéys, án,		<i>siámo,</i> <i>siéte,</i> <i>sono,</i>		
Plus- perfect.	avia, avias, avia,	} Estádo.	<i>era,</i> <i>éri,</i> <i>era,</i>	} Stato. <i>steteram, &amp;c.</i>	} I had bene, or had stood, &c.
	aviámos, aviades, avian,		<i>erauámo,</i> <i>erauáte,</i> <i>erano,</i>		
future.	Estaré, estarás, estará,		<i>staré,</i> <i>starái,</i> <i>stará,</i>	} Stabo, &c.	} I shall or will stande or be, &c.
	estarémos, estaráys, estarán.		<i>starémo,</i> <i>staréte,</i> <i>starámo.</i>		

## Imperative mode.

Impe- rative mode.	Está, sta, esté, estémos, estád, estén.	} <i>stá,</i> <i>stia,</i>  <i>siámo,</i> <i>siáte,</i> <i>siáno.</i>	} <i>sta, stato, &amp;c.</i>	} be thou, or stand thou, &c.

## Subjunctive mode

Pres. Como	Spanish.	Quando	Italian.	Cum	Latin.	When I am or stand, &c.	
	Esté, Estés, Esté, Estémos, Estéys, Estén.		Stia, Stij, Stia,  Stiámo, Stiáte, Stiáno.		Stem, &c.		
Imper- fect. Como	Estuviéra, estaría, estuviéssé, Estuviéras, estariás, estuviésses, Estuviéra, estaría, estuviéssé, Estuviéramos, estariamos, estuviéssémos, Estuviérades, estariades, estuviéssedes, Estuviéran, estarian, estuviéssen.	Quando	Starei, stéssé, staría, Starésti, stéssé, Starébbe, stéssé, staría,  Starémo, stéssimo, Staréste, stéssé, Starébbono, stariáno, stéssero.	Cum	Starem, &c.	When I stode or was, &c.	
Perfect Como	A'ya, ayas, aya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,	} estádo. Quando	Sia, Sj, Sia,  Siámo, Siáte, Siáno,	} Stato.    } Stati.	Cum	Steterim &c.	When I have stood or bene, &c.

uyiéra.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

pluper Como	{ uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe, uviéras, oꝝ uviéſſes, uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe,  uviéramos, oꝝ uviéſſemos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéſſedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéſſen,	{ eſtádo. Quando	{ Poſſi, Poſſi, Poſſe,  Poſſimo, Poſſe, Poſſero.	{ Státo.  Stati.	{ Cum	{ ſteſſem Etc.	{ when I had bene, oꝝ ſtood, &c
firſt futur Como	{ Eſtuviaére, Eſtuviaéres, Eſtuviaére,  Eſtuviaéremos, Eſtuviaéredes, Eſtuviaéren,	{ Quando	{ Saré, Sarái, Sarái,  Sarémo, Saréte, Sarámo,	{ Státo.  Stati.	{ Cum	{ Stetero, Etc.	{ when I ſhal oꝝ wil ſtand oꝝ be Etc.
ſecond futur Como	{ uviére, oꝝ avré, uviéres, oꝝ avrás, uviére, oꝝ avrá,  uviéremos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, uviéren, oꝝ avrán,	{ Eſtádo.	{ Saré, Sarái, Sarái,  Sarémo, Saréte, Sarámo,	{ Státo.  Stati.	{ Cum	{ Stetero, Etc.	{ when I ſhal oꝝ wil be oꝝ ſtand Etc.

## Infinitive mode Preſent.

Eſtár, ]	Stare, ]	Stare, ]	to Stand oꝝ be.
avér Eſtádo, ]	hauer Státo, ]	Steteriſſe, ]	to have Stood oꝝ bene.
avér oꝝ eſperár d' eſtár,	{ d'ouer Stare, eſſer per Stare,	Staturu meſſe,	to Stand hereafter.
Eſtádo, ]	Stando, ]	Stando, ]	In Standing oꝝ being.
Eſtádo, ]	Stato, ]	Statu, ]	Stode oꝝ bene.

theſe Verbes following make their Preſent tenſe of the Indicative, by changing the laſt ſyllable ſaué one of the Infinitive the e into ie, and the o into ue, as

Infinitive.	Preſ.	Preterperfect.
Aſſentár, to ſet,	yo aſſiéto,	Aſſenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo approúeo,	Aprové.
Sentár, to ſet,	yo ſiéto,	Senté.
Sonár, to ſound,	yo ſuéno,	Soné.
Conſervár, to keepe,	yo conſiéuo,	Conſervé.
Atronár, to thunder,	yo atruéno,	Attroné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciégo,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuéto,	Conté.
Cerrár, to ſhut, to locke,	yo ciérro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguéſlo,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entiérro,	Enterré.
Derrocár, to throwe downe,	yo deruéco,	derroqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo cuéſgo,	Colgué.
Deſterrár, to baniſh,	yo deſtiérro,	Deſterré.
Deſſollár, to paunch,	yo deſuéſlo,	Deſollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huéſlo,	Hollé.
Enteſár, to bend,	yo entiéſo,	Entelé.
Segár, to cut,	yo ſiégo,	Sequé.
Reſollár, to breath,	yo reſuéſlo,	Reſollé.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo reſuéſgo,	Reſolgué.
Tentrár, to aſſaie,	yo tiéto,	Tenté.
Tropeçár, to ſtumble,	yo tropiégo,	Tropecé.
Adereçár, to make readie,	yo adereçégo,	Adereçé.

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Coniugation in AR, as ANDAR,  
In Italian, *Andare*, in Latin, *Ire*, *Gradi*, to Go.

ANDAR

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.		
Present.	Ando, andas, anda,	<i>Vo, &amp; Vado, Vai, Va,</i>	<i>Go, is, &amp;c.</i>	I Go, thou Goest, &c.	
	Andamos, andays, andan.	<i>Andiamo, Andate, Vanno.</i>			
Imperfect.	Andava, Andavas, Andava,	<i>Andava, Andavi, Andava,</i>	<i>Ibam, &amp;c.</i>	I did Go, &c.	
	Andavamos, Andavades, Andavan.	<i>Andavamo, Andavate, Andavano.</i>			
First Perfect.	Anduve, Anduviste, Anduvo,	<i>Andai, Andasti, Ando,</i>	<i>Iui, &amp;c.</i>	I have Gone, &c.	
	Anduvimos, Anduvistes, Anduviéron.	<i>Andammo, Andastite, Andarono.</i>			
Second Perfect.	He, as, a,	<i>Sono, Sii, é,</i>	<i>Andato.</i>	<i>Iui, &amp;c. ut supra.</i>	I have Gone, &c. as before.
	Hemos, avéys, án,	<i>Andado, Siámo, Séte, Sono,</i>	<i>Andati.</i>		
Pluperfect.	Avia, Avias, Avia,	<i>Era, éri, era,</i>	<i>Andato.</i>	<i>Iueram, &amp;c.</i>	I had Gone, &c.
	Avíamos, Aviades, Avían,	<i>Andado. Erauámo, erauáte, éran.</i>	<i>Andati.</i>		
Future.	Andaré, Andarás, Andará,	<i>Andaré, andré, Andarai, andrai, Andará, andrá,</i>	<i>Ibo, &amp;c.</i>		I shall or will Go, &c.
	Andarémos, Andaréys, Andarán.	<i>Andarémo, andrémo, Andaréte, Andréte, Andaránno, andránno.</i>			

## Imperative mode

Andaru, ándaquel,	<i>Vatu, Vada, or vada colui,</i>	<i>Ito, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Go thou, &amp;c.</i>
Andémos, Andád, ánden.	<i>Andámo, Andáte, Vádan, or vádimo.</i>		

## ANDAR.

Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in A R.

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	ánde, ándes, ánde, andémos, andéys, ánden.	Quando vada, vadi, vado, radi, vada, radi, andiamo, andiate, vadano, vadino.	Cum	Eam, Ecce, When I doe go, &c.
Imper- fect Como	anduiera, andaria, anduiera, anduieras, andarias, anduieras, anduiera, andaria, anduiera, Anduieramos, andariamos, anduieramos, anduierades, andariades, anduierades, anduieran, andarian, anduieran.	Quando andassi, andaret, andaria, andassi, andarette, andaria, andassi, andarette, andaria, andassimo, andarimo, andassite, andariste, andassero, andaribbero, andariano.	Cum	irem, &c. When I did go, &c.
perfect. Como	aya, ayas, aya, ayamos, ayays, ayan,	Quando sia, sii, sia, siamo, siate, siamo,	Cum	ierim, Ecce, When I have gone, &c.
pluper- fect tense Como	uviéra, o, uviésses, uviéra, o, uviésses, uviéra, o, uviésses, uviéramos, o, uviéssimos, uviérades, o, uviéssedes, uviéran, o, uviéssen,	Quando fosse, sarei, fosse, saresti, fosse, sarebbe, fossimo, saremmo, foste, sareste, fossero, sarebbero,	Cum	uissem, Ecce, When I had gone, &c.
Futur Como	anduiera, anduieras, anduiera, anduieramos, anduieredes, anduierén.	Quando saré, sarás, sará, sarémo, saréte, saránmo,	Cum	iero, Ecce, When I shall or will goe hereaf- ter, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

ANDAR,] Andare,] Ire,] to go.

## Pluperfect tense.

Avér andádo,] Effere andáto,] Iuiffe,] to have gone.

## Future tense.

Avér o, esperar de andar,] Effere per andare,] Doyer andare,] Hauer ad andare,] Iurum esse,] to go, o, about to go.

## Gerund.

Andádo,] Andádo,] Eundo,] in going.

## Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que anda,] Andante,] Eunt,] one going.

## Participle of the Pieter and Passive voice.

Andádo,] Andato,] gone.



Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as Traer,  
Saber, Tener, Poder, Querer, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo TRA'YGO, tu trács, aquel tráe,	io APPORTO, tu appórti, colui appórti,	Adduco, &c.	I fetch oz bring, &c.
	traémos, traéys, trácn.	appórtámo, appórtáte, appórtano.		
Imper.	Tráya, trayás, traya,	appórtáua, appórtáui, appórtáua,	Adducebam, &c.	I did fetch oz bring, &c.
	trayámos, trayádes, trayán,	appórtáuimo, appórtáuáte, appórtáuano.		
First Perf.	trúxe, oz tráxe, truxiste, oz traxiste, trúxo, oz tráxo,	appórtái, appórtáste, appórtó,	Adduxi, &c.	I haue fetcht oz bought, &c.
	truximos, oz traximos, truxistes, oz traxistes, truxéron, oz traxéron,	appórtámmo, appórtástte, appórtáron, appórtáro, appórtár.		
second Perf.	hé, <i>o hui</i> as, &c. <i>hui</i> traydo.	ho, } hai, } appórtáto.	Adduxi, &c.	I haue fetcht oz brought, &c.
Plu= perfect	avia, } avias, &c. } traydo.	hauéua, } hauéui, } Appórtáto.	Adduxeram, &c.	I had fetcht oz bought, &c.
Futur.	traeré, traerás, traerá,	appórtaró, appórtarái, appórtará,	Adducam, &c.	I shall oz will fetch oz bring, &c.
	traerémos, traeréys, traerán,	appórtarémo, appórtaréte, appórtaránno.		

*yo le o bringo,  
tu as o bringas,  
aquel le o bringa,  
2. future*

## Imperative mode.

Impe rative mode.	Tráe tu, tráyga aquel.	Apporta tu, appórti colui,	Adduc, addu- cito.	Bring oz fetch thou, &c.
	traémos, <i>trayámos</i> traéd, tráygan,	appórtámo, appórtáte, appórtino,		

of

**TRAER** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as TRAER, in Italian Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Adducere, Menare, in Latin Adducere, Afferre, Trahere, to fetch, to bring, to Carrie, to Drawe.*

**Subiunctive mode.**

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b> Como	Tráya o Tráya, Tráyas o Tráyas, &c. Tráya, o Tráya, Trayámos, Trayáys, Traygan.	Quando Apporti, Apporti, Apporti, Apportiamo, Apportiate, Apportino.	Cum Adducam, &c.	When I doe fetch, or bring, &c.
<i>Traxera in multis modis. V. supra p. 23. in v. b. Autr.</i> <b>Imper.</b> fect. Como	Truxera, Traeria, Truxesse, Truxeras, Traerias, Truxesses, Truxera, Traeria, Truxesse. Truxéramos, Traeríamos, Truxéssimos Truxérades, Traeríades, Truxéssedes, Truxéran, Traerían, Truxéssen.	Quando Apportarei o Apportassi, Apportaresti o Apportassi, Apportarebbe o Apportasse. Apportarémmo o Apportassimo Apportarestes o Apportassete, Apportarebbono o Apportassero	Cum Adducere, &c.	When I did fetch or bring, &c.
<i>you shal find in some authors Traxesse, Traxesses, &amp;c.</i>				
<b>perfect</b> Como	aya, ayás, aya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan.	Quando Habbiá, Habbi, Habbiá, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno,	Cum Adduxerim, &c.	When I haue fetch'd or brought, &c.
<i>yo traeria tu traerias v. supra p. 23. v. b. in v. b. Autr.</i> <b>pluper</b> fect. Como	uiera o uiesse, uieras o uiesse, uiera o uiesse, uierámos o uiessemos, uierádes o uiesse, uierán o uiesse,	Quando Hauerei o Hauessi, Haueresti o Hauessi, Hauerébbe o Hauessi, Hauerémmo o Hauessimo, Haueréste o Hauessi, Hauerébbono o Hauessero	Cum Adduxissem, &c.	When I had brought or fetch'd, &c.
<b>Futur.</b> Como	Truxere, Truxeres, Truxere. Truxéremos, Truxéredes, Truxéren.	Quando Haueró Hauerá, Hauerá, Hauerémo Haueréte Haueránno	Cum Adduxero, &c.	When I shall bring or fetch, &c.

**Infinitive mode Present tense.**

TRAER] Apportare] Adducere,] to bring, to fetch.

Pluperfect tense.

Avér Traydo,] Hauer Apportato,] Adduxisse,] to haue brought.

Future tense.

Avér o Esperár de traér,] Douer Apportare,  
Essere per Apportare,] Adducturum esse,] to bring hereafter.

Gerund.

Trayéndo,] Apportando,] Adducendo,] in bringing or fetching.

Participle of the Active and Present tense.

El que trae,] Apportante,] Adducens,] one bringing.

Participle of the Passive and Pluper tense.

Traydo,] Apportato,] Adductus,] brought.

Participle of the Future tense.

el que ha o espéra de traér,] Douendo Apportare,] Adducturus,] I bout to bring  
Essendo per Apportare,] or fetch.

Ches

# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

45

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding an c before e, thus,

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pret.
Acaecer, to happen,	yo acaécio,	Acaecí.
Acontecer, <i>idem</i> ,	yo aconteécio,	Acontecí.
Adolecer, to be soze w <sup>th</sup> hee,	yo adoleécio,	Adolecí.
Agradecer, to giue thanks,	yo agradécio,	Agradecí.
Amortecer, to swonne,	yo amortécio,	Amorteci.
Desfallecer, <i>idem</i> ,	yo desfalleécio,	Desfallecí.
Apetecer, to desire,	yo apetécio,	Apetecí.
Crecer, to growe,	yo creécio,	Creceí.
Encallecer, to waxe hard as hawe.	yo encalleécio,	Encallecí.
Encarecer, to augment,	yo encareécio,	Encarecí.
Empecer, to hinder,	yo empécio,	Empecí.
Establecer, to establish,	yo estableécio,	Establecí.
Fenecer, to finish,	yo fenécio,	Fenecí.
Pacer, to feede,	yo páécio,	Pací.
Perecer, to perish,	yo perécio,	Perecí.

## Except.

Vencer, to overcome,

yo venço,

Venci.

In all other modes and Tenses they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the second Coniugation in ER.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative by changing g into j, which the Spaniards in writing do much use, setting downe the one for the other, as wel in Nounes as in Verbes, as in Nounes Magistad, Majestad: Mensaje, Mensaje, and the like.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pret.
Encoger, to withdraw,	yo encójo,	Encogi.
Recoger, to gather up or retire	yo recójo,	Recogi.
Acoger, to entertaine,	yo acójo,	Acogí.
Escoger, to choose out,	yo escójo,	Escogí.
Coger, to gather,	yo cójo,	Cogí.
Vngir, to annoint,	yo unjo,	Vngí.

In other modes and Tenses like the Regulars.

These make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding i in the last syllable same one of the Infinitive, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pret.
Defender, to defend,	yo defiéndio,	Defendi.
Dehender, to cleave asunder.	yo dehiéndio,	Dehendi.

And these make the Present tense by turning o in the last syllable same one of the Infinitive into ue, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pret.
Boluer, to turne,	yo buélvo,	Bolvi.
Reboluer, to retorne,	yo rebuélvo,	Rebolvi.
Soler, to be wont,	yo suélo,	Soli.
Coser, to sowe,	yo cuéso,	Cosí.
Cozer, to seethe,	yo cuézo,	Cozi.
Doler, to be soze, to grieue;	yo duélo,	Doli.
And these following thus,		
Caer, to fall,	yo cáygo,	Cayí.
Roer, to gnawe,	yo róygo,	Royí.
Valer, to be worth,	yo válgo,	Valí.
Traer, to fetch or bring,	yo tráygo,	Tráixi.
Oír, to heare,	yo óygo,	Oyí.

In other Modes and Tenses like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thorow all Modes and Tenses are his Compound declined, as Retraer, to withdraw, yo Retráygo, I do withdraw, Retraíxe, I haue withdrawn, &c.

of

**SABER** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER, in Italian Sapere, Latin Scire, Sapere, to knowe.*

*Can it be said?*

**Indicative mode**  
**Spanish.**

**Italian.**

**Latine.**

<b>Pres.</b>	{ yo SE, tu Sábés, aquel Sábe.	{ Io So, tu Sái, colui Sa.	{ Scio, Scis, &c.	{ I knowe, thou knowest.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>	{ Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	{ Sappiámo, Sappéte, Sanno.	{ Sciebam, &c.	{ I did knowe, &c.
<b>First Perf.</b>	{ Sábía, Sabías, Sabía.	{ Sapéua, Sapéui, Sapéua.	{ Sciebam, &c.	{ I had knowen, &c.
<b>Second perfect.</b>	{ Hémos avéys án	{ Habbiámo Hauéte Hánno	{ Scivi, &c. & note.	{ I have knowen, &c. as above.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>	{ Avía Avías Avía	{ Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua	{ Sciebam, &c.	{ I had knowen, &c.
<b>Futur.</b>	{ Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	{ Sappró, Sapprái, Sapprá.	{ Sciam, &c.	{ I shal or soll know &c.

*yo se o kengo.  
tu as o kengas* } *desaber* } 2. future

**Imperative mode**

{ Sábe tu, Sepa aquel.	{ Sappi tu, Sappia colui.	{ Sci, Scito, &c.	{ Know thou, &c.
{ Sepámo, Sabéd, Sépan.	{ Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiano.	{ }	{ }

*Declining*



## Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER.

SABER.

## Subiunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
SE' P A, Sépas, Sépa,	S A P P I A, Sappi, Sappia,	Sciam, Sc.	When I doe knowe, &c.
Pres. Como	Quando	Cum	
Sepámos, Sepáys, Sepán.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiano.		

Supiera, sabría, supiéste.	Saprei, sapéssi,	Scirem,	When I did knowe, &c.
Supieras, sabrias, supiésses,	Saprésti, sapéssis,	Sc.	
Supiera, sabria, supiéste,	Saprébte, sapéssit,		
Imperfec. Como	Quando	Cum	
Supiéramos, sabríamos, supiéssémos,	Saprémo, sapéssimo,		
Supiérades, sabriades, supiéssédés,	Sapréste, sapéssite,		
Supiéran, sabrían, supiéssén.	Saprébbero, sapésséro.		

A'ya, áyas, áya,	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia,	Scuerim, Sc.	When I haue knowne, &c.
Perfec. Como	Sabido.	Saputo.	
Ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	Hábbiámo, Hábbiate, Hábbiano,		
	Quando	Cum	

Uviéra, o: uviéste,	Haueréi, haueréssi,	Scuissim,	When I had knowne, &c.
Uviéras, o: uviésses,	Hauerésti, haueréssis,	Sc.	
Uviéra, o: uviéste,	Hauerébte, haueréssit,		
Pluperfe. Como	Sabido.	Saputo.	
Uviéramos, o: uviéssémos,	Hauerémo, haueréssimo,		
Uviérades, o: uviéssédés,	Haueréste, haueréssite,		
Uviéran, o: uviéssén,	Hauerébbero, hauerésséro,		

Supiere,	Hauero,	Sciuero,	When I shal knowe, &c.
Supieres,	Hauerái,	Sc.	
Supiere,	Haueráy,		
First future Como	Quando	Saputo.	
Supiéremos,	Hauerémo,		
Supiéredes,	Haueréste,		
Supiéren.	Haueránno,		

Uviére, o: avré,	Haueró,	Sciuero,	When I shall knowe, &c.
Uviéros, o: avrás,	Hauerái,	Sc.	
Uviére, o: avrá,	Hauerá,	et antea.	
Second future Como	Sabido.	Saputo.	
Uviéremos, o: avrémos,	Hauerémo,		
Uviéredes, o: avréys,	Haueréste,		
Uviéren, o: aurán.	Haueránno,		

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

SABER ]	Sapere, ]	Scire, ]	to knowe.
avér Sabido, ]	Hauer Saputo, ]	Scuissé, ]	to haue knowne.

avér o: ef-	Douer sapere,	Scitutum esse, ]	to knowe hereafter.
Estar per de	Hauer a sapere,		
Saber,	Effere per sapere,		

Gerund.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Sabiendo, ]	<i>Sapendo, ]</i>	<i>Sciendo, ]</i>	In knowing.
el que Sábe, ]	Participle of the Present, and Future.		
	<i>quello chi Sa, ]</i>	<i>Sciens, ]</i>	one knowing.
Sabido, ]	Participle of the Preter tense and Passive.		
	<i>Saputo, ]</i>		known.

Declining of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in ER, as TENER, TENER.  
In Italian, and Latin, *Tenere*, to hold.

## Indicative mode

Present.	YO TENGO, tu TIÉNES, aquel TIÉNE,  Tenémos, Tenéys, Tiénen,	IO TENGO, tu TIÉNI, colui TIÉNI,  Teniámo, Teneite, Tengono.	Teneo, &c.	I do hold, &c.
Imperfe.	Tenia, Tenias, Tenia,  Teníamos, Teniades, Tenian.	Teniua, & tenia, Teneui, Teneua, & tenia,  Tenuíamos, Tenuiades, Tenuian.	Tenebam, &c.	I did hold, &c.
First Perfec.	Tuve, Tuviste, Tuvo,  Tuvimos, Tuvistes, Tuvieron.	Tenni, Teneisti, Tenne,  Tenuimmo, Teneistis, Tenuerunt.	Tenui, &c.	I have held, &c.
Second Perfec.	Yo He, Tu as, aquel á,  Hémos, avéys, án,	Ho, Hai, Ha,  Habbiámo, Havéite, Hámmo.	Tenui, &c.	I have held, &c. as next above.
Pluperfe.	Avia, Avias, Avia,  Avíamos, Aviades, Avian.	Havéua, Havéui, Havéua,  Havenuíamos, Havenuiades, Havenuian.	Tenueram, &c.	I had held, &c.
Future.	Tendré, o: Terné, Tendrás, o: Ternás, Tendrá, o: Terná,  Tendrémos, o: Ternémos, Tendréys, o: Ternéys, Tendrán, o: ternán,	Tenneré, & Terré, Tennerás, & Terrás, Tennerá, & Terra,  Tenerémo, & Terrémo, Teneréite, & Terréite, Teneranno, & Terranno,	Tenebo, &c.	I shall o: will hold, &c.

Imperative

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

49

## Imperative mode

Tén tu,  
Ténga aquel,  
  
Tengámos,  
Tenéd,  
Téngan.

Tieni tu,  
Ténga colui,  
  
Tenidmo,  
Tenéte,  
Téngano.

Tene tu,  
&c.  
  
Hold thou, &c.

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Ténga, Téngas, Ténga,	Quando	Ténga, Téngbi, Ténga,	Cum	Teniam, &c.
	Tengámos, Tengays, Téngan.		Tenidmo, Teniáte, Téngano.		When I dos hold, &c.
Imper fect. Como	Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéffe, Tuviéras, ternias, tuviéffes, Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéffe.	Quando	Teniéffi, teneréi, teneria, Teniéffi, tenerébi, Teniéffi, tenerébbe, teneria,	Cum	Tenerem, &c.
	Tuviéramos, terniamos, tuviéffemos, Tuviérades, terniades, tuviéffedes, Tuviéran, ternian, tuviéffen.		Teniéffimo, tenerémmo, Teneréffe, teneréffe, Teneréffero, tenerébbono.		When I did hold, &c.
perfect. Como	aya, ayas, aya,  ayámos, ayays, ayan,	Quando	Habbia, Habbbi, Habbbi,  Habbiamo, Habbiate, Habbiano,	Cum	Tenuerim, &c.
	Tenido.		Tenuto.		When I haue holden, &c.
pluper fect. Como	uviéra o: uviéffe, uviéras o: uviéffes, uviéra o: uviéffe,	Quando	Hauerei o: Hauéffi, Haueréffi o: Hauéffi, Hauerébbe o: Hauéffe,	Cum	Tenuissem, &c.
	uviéramos o: uviéffemos, uviérades o: uviéffedes, uviéran o: uviéffen,		Hauerémmo o: Hauéffimo, Haueréffe o: Hauéffe, Hauerébbono o: Hauéffero		When I had holden, &c.
first Futur. Como	Tuviére, Tuviéres, Tuviére,  Tuviéremos, Tuviéredes, Tuviéren.			Cum	Tenuero, &c.
					When I shall o: wil hold, &c.
Secōd Futur. Como	uviére o: avré, uviéres o: avrás, uviére o: avrá,	Quando	Haueró Hauerás Hauerá	Cum	Tenuero, &c. v. ante.
	uviéremos o: avrémos, uviéredes o: avréys, uviéren o: avrán,		Hauerémo Haueréte Hauerámo		When I shall o: wil hold, &c. as next aboue.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

TENER,] Tene,] Tene,] to hold.

## Pterperfect tense.

Aver Tenido,] Hauér Tenuto,] Tenuisse,] to haue holden.

f 1

Future

## Declining of Verbes Irregular

## Future tense.

Aver de Tener, { Douer tenir,  
Haver a tenir,  
Essere per tenere, } Tenurum esse, ] to hold hereafter.

## Gerund.

Teniendo, ] Tenendo, ] Tenendo, ] In holding.

## Participle of the Present and Future.

El que tiene, ] Teniente, ] Tenens, ] one holding.

## Participle of the Preter and Past.

Tenido, ] Tenido, ] Tenius, ] holden.

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined thozow all Modes and Tenses, as Mantener, to maintaine, yo Mantengo, Mantúve. Detener, to detaine or stay, yo Detengo, Detúve. Retener, to withhold or retaine, yo Retengo, Retúve. Sostener, to sustaine or uphold, yo Sostengo, Sustúve.

## PODER

The second Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in ER, as PODER, in Italian Potere, in Latin Possse, to be able.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo PUEDO, tu Púedes, aquel Púede.	P OSSO, Puoi, Puo.	Possu, &c.	I can or am able, &c.
	Podémos, Podéys, Púeden.	Possámo, Potéte, Possano & Pónno.		
Imperfect	Podia, Podias, Podia,	Potéa or Potéa, Potéui, Potéua or Potéu,	Poteram, &c.	I was able, &c.
	Podíamos, Podíades, Podían.	Potéuámo, Potéuáste, Potéuáno.		
First perfect.	Púde, Pudiste, Púdo.	Potui, Potuisti, Potuisti.	Potui, &c.	I could or have been able, &c.
	Pudimos, Pudistes, Pudieron.	Potuímo, Potuíste, Potuíron & Pótero.		
Second perfect.	He <i>Uu</i> as <i>Uu</i> a <i>Uu</i>	Ho Hai Ha	Potui, &c. ut supra.	I could or have been able, &c. as next above.
	Hémos avéys an	Podido. Habbiámo Hauéte Hanno	Potúro.	
Pluperf.	Avia Avias Avia	Podido. Hauéua Hauéuo Hauéua	Potueram, &c.	I had been able, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían	Hauéuámo Hauéuáste Hauéuáno	Potúro.	
Future.	Podré, Podrás, Podrá.	Potré, Potrái, Potrá,	Potero, &c.	I shall or will be able, &c.
	Podrémos, Podréys, Podrán.	Potrémo, Potréste, Potráno.		

Imperative mode wanteth as in the Latin.

of

yo e o tengo } de poder futuro 2



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

51

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PODE'R.

PODER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Pueda, puedas, pueda, puedamos, podays, puedan,	Quando	Possa, possa, possa, possiamo, & potiamo, possiate, & potiate, possano.	Cum	Possim, &c.
					When I can or be able, &c.
Imper- fect. Como	Pudiera, podria, pudiessse, pudieras, podrias, pudiessses, pudiera, podria, pudiessse, pudiéramos, podriamos, pudiésssemos, pudiérades, podriades, pudiésssedes, pudieran, podrian, pudiéssen.	Quando	Potessi, potessi, potria, potessi, potessi, potessi, potessi, potria, potissimo, potissimo, poteste, poteste, potessero, potessero, potiano,	Cum	Potessim, &c.
					When I could or might be able, &c.
Perf. Como	aya, ayas, aya, ayamos, ayays, ayan,	Quando	habbia, habbi, habbia, habbiamo, habbiate, habbiano,	Cum	Potuerim, &c.
	Podido.		Potuto.		When I have been able, &c.
Plus- perfect. Como	uviéra, or uviéssse, uviéra, or uviéssses, uviéra, or uviéssse, uviéramos, or uviésssemos, uviérades, or uviésssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Quando	hauessi, haueréi, hauessi, haueréi, hauessi, haueréi, hauissimo, hauerémo, hauéste, haueréste, hauessero, hauerébbono,	Cum	Potuissem, &c.
	Podido.		Potuto.		When I had been able, &c.
First future. Como	Pudiere, pudieres, pudiere, pudiéremos, pudiéredes, pudiéren.	Quando		Cum	Potueró, &c.
					When I shall be a- ble hereaf- ter, &c.
Second futur. Como	uviére, or avré uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	Quando	haueró, hauerai, hauerá, hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno,	Cum	Potueró, &c. et ante.
	Podido.		Potuto.		When I shall or will be able here after, &c. as next a- bout.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Podér,] Potère,] Possé,] To be able.

Interperfect tense.

Avér podido,] Hauer potuto,] Potuissse,] To have been able.

Gerund.

Pudiendo,] Potendo,] In being able.

Participle.

Podido,] Potuto,] Able.

Future. Estar por poder. To be able  
just after

Querér. Of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in ER, as QVERER, in Italian, Volere, ] in Latin Velle, ] To will, to loue, or to be willing.

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.  
yo QVIERO,  
tu quierés,  
aquel quiere,  
Plu.  
querémos,  
queréys,  
quierén.

Italian.  
io VOGLIO,  
tu vuoi,  
colui vuole,  
Plu.  
vogliamo,  
volete,  
vogliono.

Latin.  
Volo,  
Vis, &c.

I will, or loue, &c.

Imper.  
queria,  
querias,  
queria,  
queríamos,  
queriades,  
quieran.

voleua,  
voleui,  
voleua,  
voleuámo,  
voleuáte,  
voleuano.

Volebam, &c.

I bid will, or I bid loue, &c.

First Perf.  
quise,  
quisiste,  
quiso,  
quisimos,  
quisistes,  
quisieron.

velli, & volsi,  
vollesti,  
volle, & volse,  
volémus,  
vollestis,  
volsero.

Volui, &c.

I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c.

second Perf.  
He,  
as,  
a,  
hemos or avémos  
avéys,  
an,

Querido.

ho,  
hai,  
ha,  
habbiámo,  
hauete,  
hanno.

Volui, &c.  
et ant.

I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c. as next above.

Plu= perfect  
avia,  
aviás,  
avia,  
aviámos,  
aviades,  
avian.

Querido.

hauéua,  
hauéui,  
hauéua,  
hauéuámo,  
hauéuáte,  
hauéuano.

Volueram, &c.

I had willed, or I had loued, &c.

Futur  
querre,  
querrás,  
querrá,  
querreímos,  
querreýs,  
querrán.

vorré,  
vorrái,  
vorrá,  
vorreímo,  
vorreíte,  
vorranno.

Volam, &c.

I will, or shall will or loue, &c.

## Imperative mode.

Impe  
rative  
mode.  
quere tu,  
quera aquél,  
querámos,  
queréd,  
querán.

Querir tu  
quira el  
quieran aquél

vui tu,  
voglia colui,  
vogliamo,  
vogliate,  
vogliano.

Latin wanteth the Imperative mode.

will thou or loue thou, &c.

Uue querido  
Uuisti querido.

yo querre  
querre  
querre  
querre  
querre  
querre

querre  
querre  
querre  
querre  
querre  
querre

# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in ER, as QVERER.

53

Querér.

## Subiunctive mode

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.	
<i>quiera</i> <i>quiera</i> <i>quiera</i>	Querá, or Querá, &c.	Voglia, Vogli, Voglia,	Velim, &c.	When I will or loue, &c.
<i>quieran</i>	Querámos, Queráys, Querán.	Quando Vogliámo, Vogliáte, Vogliano.	Cum	
<i>vi supra in v. his Aut S. v.</i>	Quisiera, quieria, quisiesse, Quisieras, quierias, quisiesse, Quisiera, quieria, quisiesse,	Quando Voléssi, vorrei, & vorria, Volésti, vorresti, Voléssi, vorrebbe, vorria,	Vellem, &c.	When I would or did loue, &c.
<i>Imper fec. Como</i>	Quisierámos, querriámos, quisiessemos, Quisierades, querriades, quisiesse des, Quisieran, querrian, quisiesse en.	Quando Voléssimo, vorremmo, Voléste, vorreste, Voléssero, vorrebbero, & (vorriano.)	Cum	
<i>perfect. Como</i>	A'ya, áyas, áya,	Quando Habbia, Hábbi, Habbia,	Voluerim, &c.	When I have willed or lo- ued, &c.
<i>ut supra in v. his miffes? +</i>	1. <i>plus perfect.</i> Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésse des, uviéra, or uviésse,	Quando Hauessi, or haueréi, Hauessi, or hauerésti, Hauessi, or hauerébbe,	Cum Voluissim, &c.	When I had willed or loued &c.
<i>2. <i>plus perfect.</i> fec. Como</i>	uviérámos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviésse des, uviéran, or uviésse en,	Quando Hauéssimo, or hauerémo, Hauéste, or haueréste, Hauéssero, or hauerébbono,	Voluto. Cum	
<i>first futur Como</i>	Quisiere, Quisieres, Quisiere,	Quando Haueré, Hauerái, Hauerá,	Voluero &c.	When I shall will or loue.
<i>second futur Como</i>	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá,	Quando Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá,	Voluero &c. ut ante.	When I shall be willing or loue, &c.
	uviérémos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	Quando Hauerémo, Haueréte, Haueránno,	Voluto. Cum	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Querér, ] Volere, ] Velle, ] to will or loue.

avér Querido, ] *haver Voluto, ] Voluissé, ] to have loued or bene willing.*

Queriendo, ] *Gerund.*  
Volendo, ] Volendo, ] In being willing or louing.

Querido, ] *Participle.*  
Voluto, ] loued, willed.

As to this verbe thus particle Mas, and so decline it thozow al moods and tenses, and it makes the signification to be in Latin *Malo*, in English I had leifer, I would rather, as yo Quiero mas, in Latin *Malo*, I would leifer, or loue moze: tu quierés mas, *Mauis*, thou hadst rather or louest moze, *Pieterimperfect* tense yo Quería mas, I would rather or loued moze. *Pieterperf.* Quisé mas, &c.

*Latin. amodo querere  
est per quere  
Esper per quere*

PONER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PONER, in Italian, Ponere, Porre, & Mettere, in Latin, Ponere, Locare, to Put, to place.*

## Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	YO PONGO, tu Pónes, aquél Póne,	IO PÓNGO, tu Póni, colui Pène,	Pono, &c.	I doe put, &c.
	Plu. Ponémós, Ponéys, Pónen.	Plu. Poníamo, Ponéte, Póngono,		
Imperfect	Ponia, Ponías, Ponia,	Ponéua, Ponéui, Ponéua,	Pónēbam, &c.	I did put, &c.
	Poníamos, Poníades, Ponían.	Ponēuámo, Ponēuáde, Ponēuáno.		
First Perfect	Púse, Pusiste, Púlo,	Póse, Ponéssi, Póse,	Posui, &c.	I haue put, &c.
	Pusimos, Pusistes, Pusieron.	Ponémmo, Ponéste, Pósero.		
Second Perfect	He, <i>el</i> <i>huisse</i> as, <i>el</i> <i>huisse</i> a,	Ho, Hai, Ha,	Posui, &c.	I haue put, &c.
	Puésto. Avémos, y hémos, Avéys, an,	Habbiámo, Hauét e, Hánno,	Posito.	
Pluperfect	Avia, Avias, Avia,	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua,	Posueram, &c.	I had put, &c.
	Puésto. Avíamos, Avíades, Avían,	Hauēuámo, Hauēuáde, Hauēuáno,	Posito.	
Future	Porné, o: Pondré, Pornás, o: Pondrás, Porná, o: Pondrá,	Poneró, & Porró, Ponerái, & Porrái, Ponerá, & Porrá,	Ponam, &c.	I shal o: will put, &c.
	Pornémós, o: Pondrémos, Pornéys, o: Pondréys, Pornán, o: Pondrán.	Ponerémo, & Porrémo, Poneréte, & Porréte, Ponneránno, & Poránno.		

## Imperative mode.

Pón tu, Pónga aquél,	Pone tu, Pónga colui,	Pone, Poneto, Ponat, Po- neto, &c.	put thou, put he o: let him put, &c.
Pongámos, Ponéd, Póngan.	Poníamo, Ponéte, Póngano.		



## Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PONER. PONER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b> Como Ponga, Pongas, Ponga.	<b>Quando</b> Ponga, Ponghi, Ponga. Poniámo, Poniáte, Pongamo.	<b>Cum</b> Ponam, &c.	When I do put, &c.
<b>Imper.</b> Como Pusiéra, ponia or pondria, pusiesse, Pusiéras, ponia or pondrias, pusiesse, Pusiéra, ponia or pondria, pusiesse.	<b>Quando</b> Ponissi, Ponerei, Ponissi, Ponerésti, Ponissi, Ponerébbe, Ponissimo, Ponerémmo, Ponissi, Poneréste, Ponissiro, Ponerébbono.	<b>Cum</b> Ponerem, &c.	When I did put, &c.
<b>Perf.</b> Como Pusiéramos, poniámos or pondriámos, pusiessemos, Pusiérades, poniádes or pondriádes, pusiesseades, Pusiéran, ponián or pondrián, pusiesseén.	<b>Quando</b> Hábbia Hábbi Hábbia Habbiámo Habbiáte Habbiáno Haueréi or Hauerésti Hauerésti or Hauerésti Hauerébbe or Haueréste Hauerémmo or haueréssimo Haueréste or Haueréste Hauerébbono or Haueréssero	<b>Cum</b> Posuerim, &c.	When I have put, &c.
<b>Imper.</b> Como Pusiéramos, poniámos or pondriámos, pusiessemos, Pusiérades, poniádes or pondriádes, pusiesseades, Pusiéran, ponián or pondrián, pusiesseén.	<b>Quando</b> Hábbia Hábbi Hábbia Habbiámo Habbiáte Habbiáno Haueréi or Hauerésti Hauerésti or Hauerésti Hauerébbe or Haueréste Hauerémmo or haueréssimo Haueréste or Haueréste Hauerébbono or Haueréssero	<b>Cum</b> Posuissim, &c.	When I had put, &c.
<b>First Futur.</b> Como Pusiéremos, Pusiéredes, Pusiéren.	<b>Quando</b> Haueró Hauerás Haterá Hauerémo Haueréte Hauerémmo	<b>Cum</b> Posuero, &c.	When I shall or will put, &c.
<b>Second Futur.</b> Como Uviéremos or avrémos uviéredes or avréys uviéren or avrán,	<b>Quando</b> Haueró Hauerás Haterá Hauerémo Haueréte Hauerémmo	<b>Cum</b> Posuero, &c.	When I shall or will put, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

PONER, ] Ponere, Mettere, Porre, ] Ponere, ] to Put.

## Preterperfect tense.

Aver Puesto, ] Hauer Puesto, ] Posuissim, ] to have Put.

## Gerund.

Poniendo, ] Ponendo, ] Ponendo, ] In Putting.

## Participle.

Puesto, ] Puesto, ] Positus, ] Put.

After this manner are declined in all points Componer, to compose, yo Compóngo, I do compose, yo Compúse, I have composed, &c. Also Disponer, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispose, Dispúse, I have disposed. And Anteponer, to put before, yo Antepongo, I do put before, Ante-púse, I have put before. So Proponer, to set out, to allege, yo Propóngo, Propúse.

of

## HAZER.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as HAZER,  
in Italian Fare, in Latin Facere, to doe, to make.

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
<b>Pres.</b> { yo HA'GO, tu HÁzes, aquel HÁze.  Hazémos, Hazéis, Házen.	{ Io FO, tu Fai, colui Fa.  Faciámo, Fate, Fáanno.	{ Facio, &c.  I doe make or doe, &c.
<b>Imperf.</b> { Hazía, Hazías, Hazía.  Hazíamos, Hazíades, Hazían.	{ Facíua, Facíui, Facíua.  Facenámō, Facenáte, Facénano.	{ Faciebam, &c.  I did make or doe, &c.
<b>First per- fect.</b> { Hize, Hiziste, Hizo.  Hizímos, Hizístes, Hizieron.	{ Fécí, Facísti, Fécí.  Facémmo, Facístis, Fécero.	{ Feci, &c.  I have made or done, &c.
<b>Second Perfect.</b> { He o <i>He o</i> <i>quando</i> as o <i>quando</i> a <i>quando</i> Hécho. Hémos avéys an	{ Ho Hai Ha  Habbiámō Hauéte Háanno	{ Feci, &c. et ante.  I have made or done, &c.
<b>Super- fect.</b> { Avía Avias Avía  Avíamos Avíades Avían	{ Háuéua Háuéui Háuéua  Hauenámō Hauenáte Hauénano	{ Feceram, &c.  I had made or done, &c.
<b>Future.</b> { Haré, Harás, Hará.  Harémos, Haréys, Harán.	{ Faré, Farás, Fará.  Farémō, Faréte, Faránno.	{ Faciam, &c.  I shall or will make or doe, &c.

## Imperative mode.

{ Ház tu, Hága aquel.  Hagámos, Hazed, Hágan.	{ Fa tu, Faccia colui.  Facciámō, Fate, Facciamo.	{ Fac, Facito, &c.  Doe thou, or make thou, &c.
--	--	---

## Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as HAZER.

HAZER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Hága, hagas, haga,	Quando Faccia, faccia, faccia, facciamo, facciate, facciano.	Cum faciam, etc.	When I doe make or do, &c.
	hagámos, hagays, hagan.			
Imper Como	hiziéra, haría, hiziéssse, hiziéras, harías, hiziéssses, hiziéra, haría, hiziéssse,	Quando facessi, farei, faria, facessi, faresti, hiziéssse, facessi, farebbe, faria, facéssimo, farémmo, facésti, faréste, facéssero, farebbono, fariano.	Cum Facerem, etc.	When I did do or make, &c.
	hiziéramos, haríamos, hiziésssemos, hiziérades, haríades, hiziésssedes, hiziéran, harían, hiziésssen.			
Perf. Como	aya, ayas, aya,	Quando hábbia, hábbi, hábbia, habbiám, habbiáte, habbiano,	Cum Fecerim, etc.	When I haue made or done, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, ayan,			
Plus- perf. Como	uviéra, or uviéssse, uviéras, or uviéssses, uviéra, or uviéssse,	Quando hauerei, or hauessi, hauereis, or hauessi, hauerebbe, or hauessi, hauerémmo, or hauéssimo, hauerésti, or hauéste, hauerébbono, or hauéssimo	Cum Fecissem, etc.	When I had made or done, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviésssemos, uviérades, or uviésssedes, uviéran, or uviésssen,			
First future. Como	hiziére, hiziéres, hiziére, hiziéremos, hiziéredes, hiziéren.	Hecho.	Cum Fecero, etc.	When I shall or will make or do, &c.
Second futur. Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.	Hecho. Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno,	Cum Fecero, etc. vi anté. Fati- to.	When I shall or will make or do, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Hazer,] Fare,] Facere, To do, to make.

Aver hecho,] Hauer fatto,] Fecisse,] Preterperfect tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer,] Hauer a fare,] Faciendum esse,] To make or do hereafter.

Gerund.

Haziendo,] Facendo,] Faciendo,] In doing or making, &amp;c.

Supine

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

A Hazér,]	Di fare,]	Factum,]	To make or do.
De sér hécho,]	D'esser fatto,]	Fattu,]	To be made or don.
El que háze,]	Facente,]	Faciem,]	One doing or making.
Hécho]	Fatto,]	Factus,]	Made or done, &c.
El que ha, or Espéra de hazér,	Hauendo a fare,]	Fallurus,]	About to do, &c.
	Essendo per fare,]		

## CABER

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER,  
in Italian Capere, Latin Continere & Contineri,  
To containe, or to be contained.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	Yo QVEPO, tu cábes, aquél cábe,	Io CAPISCO, tu capisci, colui capisce,	Ego contineo, tu continer, &c. Ego contineor, tu contineris, &c.
	cabémos, cabéys, cáben.	capiamo, capite, capiscono,	Thou containest, &c. Thou art contained, &c.
Imper fec.	cabía, cabias, cabía,	capias, capui, capias,	continebam, &c. continebar, &c.
	cabíamos, cabiades, cábían.	capuámo, capuáde, capuáno.	I did containe, &c. I was contained, &c.
First Pers.	cúpe, cupiste, cupo,	capí, or capii, capisti, capé	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c.
	cupimos, cupistes, cupiéron.	capimmo, capiste, capérono,	I have contained, &c. I have bene con- tained, &c.
Second Pers.	he as a	Ho, Hai, Ha,	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c.
	avémos avéys an	Cabido, } Capito. Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hánno,	I have contained, &c. I have bene con- tained, &c.
Plu- perfect.	avía avias avía	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua,	continueram, &c. contentus eram vel fu- eram, &c.
	aviámos, aviades avian	Hauéuámo, Hauéuáde, Hauéuáno,	I had contained, &c. I had bene con- tained, &c.
Futur	cabré, cabrás, cabrá,	caperó, capirái, capirá,	continebo, &c. continebor, &c.
	cabrémos, cabréys, cabrán.	capirémo, capiréte, capiránno.	I shall or will con- taine, &c. I shall or will be contained, &c.



## Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER.

CABER.

## Subiunctive mode

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa,	Quando Capisca, Capisci, Capisca, Capiamo, Capiate, Capiscano.	Contineam, Et. Continear, Et.	When I doe containe, &c. When I am contained, &c.
	Quépamos, Quépays, Quépan.		Cum	
Imper. fec. Como	Cupiéra, cabria, cupiéſſe, Cupiéras, cabrias, cupiéſſes, Cupiéra, cabria, cupiéſſe, Cupiéramos, cabriamos, cupiéſſemos, Cupiérades, cabriades, cupiéſſedes, Cupiéran, cabrian, cupiéſſen.	Quando Capissi, caperissi, caperia, Capisti, capireſſi, Capisse, capirebbe, caperia, Capissimo, capiremmo, Capiste, capireſſe, Capissero, capirebbono, ca- piriano.	Continerem, Et. Continerer Et.	When I did containe, &c. When I was contained, &c.
			Cum	
Perfec. Como	A'ya, ayas, aya, Ayámos, ayays, ayan,	Cabido. Habbi, Habbi, Habbi, Habbiám, Habbiáte, Habbianno,	Capito. Cum	When I haue contained, &c. When I haue been contain- ed, &c.
			Cum	
pluper. fec. Como	Uviéra, & uviéſſe, uviéras, & uviéſſes, uviéra, & uviéſſe, uviéramos, & uviéſſemos, uviérades, & uviéſſedes, uviéran, & uviéſſen,	Cabido. Hauissi, & haueriſſi, Hauisti, & haueriſſi, Hauisse, & haueribbe, Hauissimo, & haueremmo, Hauiste, & haueriſſe, Hauissero, & haueribbono	Capito. Cum	When I had contai- ned, &c. When I had bin, &c.
			Cum	
Futur. Como	Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére, Cupiéremos, Cupiéredes, Cupiéren.		Continuero Et. Contentus ero, &c.	When I ſhal containe, &c. When I ſhal be contained &c.
			Cum	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

CABER, ]	Capere,	Continere, } to containe, &c. Contineri, } to be contained, &c.
Deterperfect tense.		
avér Cabido, ]	hauer capito,	Continuisse, } to haue contained, &c. Contentum Eſſe vel fuiſſe, } to haue been contained, &c.
Gerund.		
Cabiéndo, ]	Capendo, ]	Continendo, } In containing, &c. } I being contained, &c.
Participle.		
Cabido, ]	Capito, ]	Contentus, ] contained.

## VER.

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as VER, in Italian  
Vedere, Latin Videre, to See.*

## Indicative mode

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres.	YO VEO, tu Vées, aquel Véc,	IO Vedo & VEGGIO, tu Védi, colui Vède,		Video, &c.	I doe see, &c.
	Vémos, Véys, Véan.	Vediám, & Veggiam, Védete, Vedém, & Veggano.			
Imper fect. Como	Vía, Vías, Vía.	Vedú, & Vedía, Vedú, & Vedía, Vedú, & Vedía.		Videbam, &c.	I did see, &c.
	Víamos, Víades, Vían.	Vedevamo, Vedevate, Vedevano, & Vedevano.			
First perfect.	Ví o, Vide, Viste, o, Viste, Vió, o, Vido,	Vidi, o, Vidi, Vidisti, Vidisti, Vidisti.		Vidi, &c.	I have seen, &c.
	Vímos, Vístes, Vieron.	Vidimmo, Vidistis, Videro.			
second perfect.	He as a	Ho Hai, Ha,		Vidi, &c.	I have seen, &c.
	Hémos avéys an	Visto. Habbiám Hauete, Hánno	Veduto, o, Visto.		
pluper fect.	Avía Avías Avía.	Hauéa Hauéi, Hauéa,		Videram, &c.	I had seen, &c.
	Avíamos Avíades Avían	Visto. Hauévám Hauévate Hauévano	Veduto, o, Visto.		
Futur.	Veré, Verás, Verá,	Vederó, & Vederó, Vederái, & Vederái, Vederá, & Vederá.		Videbo, &c.	I shall o, will see, &c.
	Verémos, Veréys, Verán.	Vederém, & Vederém, Vederete, & Vederete, Vederanno, & Vederanno.			
Imperative mode.					
	Véc tu, Véa aquel,	Vedi tu, Veda, & veggia colui,		Vide, videro, &c.	See thou, &c.
	Veámos, Véd, Véan.	Veggiam, Védete, Védano, & Veggano.			

In the Subiunctive and Infinitive mode altogether as verbes aforesgoing, as the Present tense Vea, the Preterimperfect. Viéra, veria, viése, the Preterperfect. áya visto, the Preterpluperfect. uviéra, o, uviése, visto, the Future viére, Infinitive vér, Participle visto.

Soler, to be wont or accustomed. **Indicat. Pres.** yo Suelo, I am wont, tu Suelas, aquel Suelo, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suelen, they are wont. **Imperfect.** Solia. **Perfect.** Soli. In like manner Doler, to be soze, declined, yo Duélo, Dolas, Doli, He Dolido, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbs Irregular in IR or Yr, as  
VENIR, in Italian and Latin Venire, to Come.

VENIR

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>	yo VENGO, tu Viénes, aquel Viéne.	Io VENGO, tu viéni, colui viene.	Venio, &c.	I do come, &c.
	<b>Plur.</b> Venimos, Venis, Viénen.	Veniamo, Venite, Vengono.		
<b>Imperf.</b>	Venía, Venías, Venía.	Veniua, Venui, Veniva.	Veniebam, &c.	I did come, &c.
	Veníamos, Veníades, Venían.	Veniúamo, Venúate, Venivano.		
<b>First Perfect.</b>	Vine, Veniste, Vino.	Venni, Venisti, Venne.	Veni, &c.	I have come, &c.
	Venimos, Veniste, Venieron.	Venimmo, Veniste, Vennero.		
<b>Second Perfect.</b>	He as a Venido.	Sono sei é	Veni, &c.	I have come, &c.
	Hémos avéys an	Siamo Sete Sono		
<b>Imperf.</b>	Avia Avias Avia Venido.	Era eri era	Veneram, &c.	I had come, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían	Eraúamo Eraúate Erano		
<b>Futur.</b>	Vendré or Verné, Vendrás or Vernás, Vendrá or Verná.	Veniré or Ferré, Vnerá or Ferrá, Venerá or Ferrá.	Veniam, &c.	I shall or will come, &c.
	Vendrémos or Vernémos, Vendréys or Vernéys, Vendrán or Vernán.	Venirémos or Ferrémos Veniréte or Ferréte, Veniránno or Ferránno.		

## Imperative mode.

Ven tu,  
Vénga a quel.  
  
Vengámos,  
Venid,  
Véngan.

Vien tu,  
Venga colui.  
  
Veniamó,  
Venite,  
Vengano.

Veni Venito, Come thou, &c.  
Ec.

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Pres. Como	Venga, vengas, venga,  vengámos, vengáys, véngan.	Quando Venga, venghi, venga,  veniamó, venite, vengano.	Cum Veniam, Ec. When I do come, &c.
Imper Como	Viniéra, vernia, viniéffe, viniéras, vernias, viniéffes, viniéra, vernia, viniéffe,  Viniéramos, verniamos, viniéffemos, viniérades, verniades, viniéffedes, viniéran, vernian, viniéffen.	Quando venissi, veneri, verrei, verria, venissi, venerissi, verresti, venissi, venerébbe, verrebbe, verria,  venissimo, venirimmo, verremmo, veniste, venistis, verreste, venissero, venirdbbono, verribbono, verriano.	Cum Venirem Ec. When I do come, &c.
Imper fec. Como	aya, ayas, aya,  ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	Quando sia, si & sia, } Venuto. sia,  siamo, siate, } Venuti. siano,	Cum Venerim Ec. When I have come, &c.
pluper fec, &c. Como	Uviéra, o2 uviéffe, uviéras, o2 uviéffes, uviéra, o2 uviéffe,  uviéramos, o2 uviéffemos, uviérades, o2 uviéffedes, uviéran, o2 uviéffen,	Venido. fossi, sarei, } Venuto. fossi, saresti, } fossi, sarebbe, }  fossimo, saremmo, } Venuti. foste, sareste, } fossiro, sarebbono, }	Cum Venissim Ec. When I had come, &c.
First Futur Como	veniére, veniéres, veniére,  veniéremos, veniéredes, veniéren,		Cum Venero, Ec. When I shall o2 will come, &c.
second Futur Como	Uviére, o2 avré, uviéres, o2 avrés, uviére, o2 avrá,  uviéremos, o2 avrémos, uviéredes, o2 avréys, uviéren, o2 avrán,	Venido. saré, sarai, } Venuto. saré,  sarémo, saréte, } Venuti. sarámo,	Cum Venero, Ec. When I shall o2 will come, &c.  Infinitive



## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Venir,] Venire,] Venire,] To come.

## Pretterperfect tense.

Sér venido,] Effere venuto,] Venisse,] To have come.

## Futur tense.

Avér o: esperar de venir { Douer venire,  
 { Haver a venire, } Venturum esse,] To come hereafter.  
 { Effere per venire, }

## Gerund.

Veniendo,] Venendo,] Veniendo,] In coming.

## Participle of the Present and Active voice.

El que viene,] Veniente,] Veniens,] One coming.

## Participle of the Pretter tense and Passive voice, &amp;c.

Venido,] Venuto,] Qui venit,] Come.

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and  
 Pretterperfect Tense.

Infinitives.	Pref.	Pretterp.
Aduermir, to fall asleep,	yo Aduérmo,	Adormi.
Dormir, to sleepe,	yo Duérmo,	Dormi.
Avertir, to marke,	yo Aviérto,	Averti.
Arrepentir, to repent,	yo Arrepiento,	Arrepenti.
Cobrir, to recouer,	yo Cébro,	Cobri.
Concebir, to conceive,	yo Concibo,	Concebi.
Cernir, to sift meale,	yo Cigno,	Cerni.
Consentir, to consent,	yo Consiento,	Consenti.
Elegir, to chuse our,	yo Elijo,	Eligi.
Fingir, to faine,	yo Finjo,	Fingi.
Gemir, to grone,	yo Gimo,	Gemi.
Mentir, to lie,	yo Miento,	Menti.
Ungrir, to anoint,	yo Unjo,	Ungi.
Salir, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Saly.
Diferir, to differ,	yo Diferio,	Diferi.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Difería.

Imperfect of the Subiunct. Diferiría.

Sofrir, to suffer, yo Sófro, Sofrí.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Sofría.

Imperfect of the Subiunct. Sofriría.

The Compounds of this verbe Venir, Vengo, are declined in every respect in all Modes and Tenses thowow out as it is, as Revenir, to returne, Revengo, Revine, &c. Convenir, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convengo, Convine. Devenir, to become, yo Devengo, Devine. Sobrevenir, to come vpon suddenly, yo Sobrevengo, Sobrevine.

Of the third and last coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, & YR,  
 as Dezir,] in Italian Dire,] Latin Dicere ] to say.

DEZIR.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Pref.	Digo, dizes, dize,	Dico, dici, o: di, dice,	Dico, &c. I saie, &c.
	dezimos, dezis, dizen.	dicemo, dite, dicomo,	
		g 2	Imperfect

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

<b>Imper</b>	Dezia, deziás, dezia,	<b>Dicho.</b>	Dicéua, dicéui, dicéua,  dicenámo, dicenáte, dicénano.	<b>Déto.</b>	Dicebam etc.	I did saie, &c.
	Deziámos, deziades, dezián.					
<b>First Pers.</b>	dixe, dixiste, dixo,	<b>Dicho.</b>	diff, dicésti, diff,  dicémmo, dicéste, différo.	<b>Déto.</b>	Dixi, etc.	I haue saide, &c.
	dixímos, dixistes, dixéron.					
<b>second Pers.</b>	hé, as, a,	<b>Dicho.</b>	Ho Hai Ha  Habbiámo Hauéte Hánno	<b>Déto.</b>	Dixi, etc.	I haue saide, &c.
	hémos, avéys, án,					
<b>Plu= perfect</b>	avia, aviás, avia,	<b>Dicho.</b>	Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua  Hauenámo Hauenáte Hauénano	<b>Déto.</b>	Dixi- ram, etc.	I had said, &c.
	aviámos, aviades, avián,					
<b>Futur</b>	diré, dirás, dirá,	<b>Dicho.</b>	diré, dirái, dirá,  dirémo, diréte, dirénno.	<b>Déto.</b>	Dicam, etc.	I shall or will say, &c.
	dirémos, diréys, dirán.					

## Imperative mode.

<b>Impe rative mode.</b>	Diru, diga aquel,	<b>Dicho.</b>	Di, or dice tu, dica colui,	<b>Déto.</b>	Dic, di- cito, etc.	Saie you, &c.
	digámos, dezid, digan.		dicéámo, dite, dicano.			

Note that you shall finde with good Authors Dezi for Deziid, in the second person plural number of the Imperative.

## Subiunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Diga, Digas, Diga,	Dica, Dici, Dica.	Dicam, &c.	When I doe saie, &c.
	Digámos, Digáys, Digan.	Quando Dicidámo, Dicidáte, Dicano.	Cum	
				Imperfect

## 65

### Infinitive mode Present tense.

**Pluperfect tense.**

**Future tense.**

**Gründg.**

**Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.**

**Participle of the Preter tense and passive voice.**

**Participle of the Future tense.**

83

10

The Compounds of this verbe *Dezir*, *Digo*, in all points thow all *Qwdes* and *Tenses* declined like the Simple, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Peterp.
Biendezir, to blesse,	yo Biendigo,	Biendixe.
Maldezir, to curse,	yo Maldigo,	Maldixe.
In like sort these following thus,		
Conduzir, to conduct,	yo Conduigo,	Conduixe.
Introduzir, to bring in,	yo Introduigo,	Introduixe.
Induzir, to induce,	yo Induigo,	Induixe.
Traduzir, to translate,	yo Traduigo,	Traduixe.
Produzir, to produce,	yo Produigo,	Produixe.
Salir, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Salí.
Regir, to gouerne,	yo Rijo,	Regí.

After the maner of *Dezir*, is this verbe *Salir*, to go out or make a fallie, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicative mode yo *Salgo*, I go out, tu *Salas*, thou goest out, &c. *Peterp.* imperfect yo *Salía*, &c. First *Peterp.* *Salí*. Second *Peterp.* *Salido*, &c. *Pluperf.* *avía Salido*. Future, yo *Saldré*. Imperative *Sal* tu, goe thou out, *Salga* aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subiunctive Present tense, yo *Salga*, tu *Salgas*, &c. *Peterp.* *Saliera*, *Saldria*, *Salíesse*, &c. *Peterp.* *avía Salido*. *Pluperf.* *uiera Salido*. Future *Saliere*. Infinitive *Salir*. Gerund *Salíendo*. Participle *Salido*.

So *Seguir* to follow, yo *Sigo*, *Siguia*, *Sigui*. He *Seguido*, *avía Seguido*, *Seguiré*. Imperative *Sigue* tu follow thou, *Siga* aquél let him follow, *Sigámos* let vs follow, *Seguid* follow ye, *Sigan* let them follow. Subiunctive Present, Como yo *Siga*. Imperfect. *Siguiera*, *Seguiera*, *Siguíesse*. *Peterp.* *avía Seguido*. *Pluperf.* *uíesse Seguido*. Future *Seguiré*, &c. Infinitive *Seguir*. Participle *Seguido*. So in all points is *Conseguir* to obtaine, declined.

*Sumir*, to drench or overwhelm, differing from *Sumar*, to sum vp, thus. In the Present of the Indicative all one yo *Sumo*, Imperfect yo *Sumía*, I did drench, yo *Sumáya*, I did summe vp. First Perfect, yo *Sumí*, I haue drenched, tu *Sumiste*, aquél *Sumió*, yo *Sumé*, I haue summed vp, tu *Sumáste*, thou hast summed vp, aquél *Sumó*, he hath summed vp, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR or YR, as YR, as YR, in Italian *Ire* or *Andare*, in Latin *Ire*, to Goe.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	V O Y,	V O & V A D O,	E o,	I goe,
	Vás,	Vái,	u, &c.	thou goest, &c.
	Vá,	Vá,		
	Vámos,	Andiámo,		
	Váys,	Andáte,		
	Ván,	Vámo,		
Imper.	Y'va,	Andáua,	Ibam, &c.	I did goe, &c.
	yvas,	Andáui,		
	yva,	Andáua,		
	yvamos,	Andauámo,		
	yvades,	Andauáte,		
	yvan,	Andauano,		
First	Fu y,	Andái,	Iui, &c.	I went, &c.
	Fuiste,	Andásti,		
Perfect	Fué,	Andó,		
	Fuímos,	Andámmo,		
	Fuistes,	Andáste,		
	Fuéron.	Andáran,		

second



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

67

second perfect.	} Y'do.	He, as a.	} Sono, Sei, é,	} Andato.	} Iui, &c.	} I have gone, &c.
		Hémos, avéys, an,				
pluper fect.	} Y'do.	Avía, Avía, Avía,	} Era, Eri, Era,	} Andato.	} Iueram, &c.	} I had gone, &c.
		Aviámos, Aviades, Avían,				
Futur		Yré, Yrás, Yrá,	} Anderó, & Andró, Anderai, oꝝ Andrái, Anderá, oꝝ Andrá,	} Ibo, &c.	} I shall or will go, &c.	
		Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.				
Imperative mode.						
		Va, & Ve, Váya,	} Vá, Váda, Vadi,			
		Vámos, yá, Váyan.				

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.  
With Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I.

## Subiunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Váya, Váyas, Váya.	Quando Vada, Vada & Vadi, Vada & Vadi.	Cum Eam, &c.	When I doe goe, &c.
	Vámos, Váys, Váyan.	Andiamo, Andiate, Vádano & Vádino.		
Imper fect. Como	Fuéra, Yría, fuéffe, Fuéras, yriás, fuéffes, Fuéra, yria, fuéffe.	Quando Andassi, Anderéi, Andería, Andassi, Anderéfi, Andasse, Anderébbe, Andería.	Cum Irem, &c.	When I did goe, &c.
	Fuéramos, yriamos, fuéffemos, Fuérades, yriades, fuéffedes, Fuéran, yrian, fuéffen.	Andassimo, Anderémmo, Andasse, Anderíste, Andassero, Anderébbono, Anderiano.		
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya,	Quando Sia Sij Sia	Cum Iuerim, &c.	When I haue gone, &c.
	áyamos, ayáys, áyan,	Siamo Siate Siano		

Pluperf.

<b>Plus perfect.</b> Como	} uviéras, oꝝ uviéſſe, uviéras, oꝝ uviéſſes, uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe,  uviéramos, oꝝ uviéſſemos uviérades, oꝝ uviéſſedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéſſen,	} Y'do.	<i>Quando</i> Fóſſi, ſarei Fóſſi, ſaréſſi Fóſſe, ſarébbe  Fóſſimo, ſarémmo Fóſſe, ſaréſſe Fóſſero, ſarébbono	} Andato.	} Iuiſſem, &c.	} When I had gone, &c.
<b>First future.</b> Como	} Fuéte, Fuéres, Fuére,  Fuéremos, Fuéredes, Fuéren.	}	}	}	} Iuero, &c.	} When I ſhall oꝝ will be, &c.
<b>ſecond futur.</b> Como	} uviére, oꝝ avré uviéres, oꝝ avrás, uviére, oꝝ avrá,  uviérimos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, uviéren, oꝝ avrán,	} Y'do.	<i>Quando</i> Saré Sarás Sará  Sarémo Saréte Saránno	} Andato.	} Iuero, &c.	} When I ſhall oꝝ wil go, &c.

## Infinitive mode Preſent tenſe.

Y'R, ] *Andare, ire,* ] *Ire,* ] to Go.

## Preterperfect tenſe.

Aver y'do, ] *Hauer andato,* ] *Iuiſſe,* ] to haue Gone.

## Future tenſe.

Aver de yr, ] *Doner Andare,* ] *Iturum eſſe,* ] to Go hereafter.  
] *Hauer ad Andare,*  
] *Eſſer per Andare,*

## Gerund.

Yéndo, ] *Andando,* ] *Eundo,* ] In Going.

## Supines.

Yr, ] *Andare,* ] *Itum,* ] to Go.  
De ſer ydo, ] *Eſſer Andato,* ] *Itu,* ] to be Gone.

## Participle of the Preſent tenſe and Active voice.

El que va, ] *Andante,* ] *Euni,* ] one Going.

## Participle of the Preter tenſe and Paſſive voice.

Y'do, ] *Andato,* ] Gone,

## Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined onely in the third person thow out all Modes and Tenses, as

### Indicative mode.

Present.	Ay,	There is.
Imperfect.	Avia,	There was.
1 Perfect.	úyo,	There was.
2 Perfect.	á,	There hath bene.
Pluperfect.	avia,	There had bene.
Future.	Avrá,	There shall be, &c.
Imperat.	A'ya,	Let there be.

### Subjunctive mode.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperf.	uviéra, avría, uviéssé,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Pluperfect.	uviéra o: uviéssé Avido,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviére o: Avra Avido.	When there shall be.

Note that the Spaniard almost continually useth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y a*, in English *There is*, as by observing you shall most usually finde, as also this third person Comple thus declined, of Complir the Infinitive.

### Indicative mode.

Present.	Comple,	Decet, Oportet,	It besemeth o: behooveth.
Imperfect.	Complia,	Decibat, Oportebat,	It did beseme.
1 Perfect.	Complió,	Decuit, Oportuit,	It hath besemed, &c.
2 Perfect.	a Complido,	Decuit, Oportuit,	
Pluperfect.	Avia Complido, Decuerat, Oportuerat,		
Future.	Complirá,	Decabit, Oportebit,	

And so thow the third person of the rest.

### Indicative mode.

Present.	E's,	There is.
Imperfect.	era,	There was.
1 Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
2 Perfect.	avia Sido,	There hath bene.
Pluperf.	avia Sido,	There had bene.
Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subjunctive mode of the verbe Ser, Soy asofe going in the third person onely.

### Indicative mode.

Present.	Es menestér,	Oportet,	It behooveth.
Imperf.	era menestér,	Oportebat,	It did behoue.
1 Perfect.	fue menestér,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
2 Perfect.	a sido menestér,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
Pluperf.	avia sido menestér, Oportuerat,		It had behoued.
Future.	avra menestér,	Oportebit,	It will behoue.

And so thow the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazér declined.

### Indicative mode.

Present.	Pláze,	It pleaseth.
Imperf.	Plazia,	It did please.
1 Perfect.	Plúgo,	It hath pleased.
2 Perfect.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
Pluperf.	avia Plazido,	It had pleased.
Future.	Plazerá,	It will please.
Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subjunctive

## Declining of Participles.

## Substantive mode.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiera, Pluguieffe,	When it did please.
Perfect.	aya Plazido,	When it hath pleased.
Imperf.	uviera Plazido,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Pluguiera,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonal of the Passive voice, you must take this particle *Se*, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added makes a verbe Impersonall Passive, as

Pres.	Se Dize,	<i>Si dice o: dices,</i>	<i>Dicitur,</i>	<i>It is said o: spoken,</i>
Imper.	Se Dezia,	<i>Si decia o: diceas,</i> &c.	<i>Dicebatur,</i> &c.	<i>It was said o: spoken</i>
Perfect.	Se Dixo,			<i>&amp;c.</i>
Imperf.	Se a Dicho,			
Plupe.	S'avia Dicho,			
Futur.	Se Dirá.			

## Of Participles.

Participle  
of the Pre-  
sent tense.

**I**n Spanish Participles of the present tense and active signification are made of the thirde person present tense of the Indicative mode of the same Verbe, putting before it the Relative, *El que*, as *El que Revela*, revealing, *Latin Revelans*: *El que Entiende*, understanding, in *Latin Intelligens*: *El que oye*, hearing, in *Latin Audiens*.

Participle  
of the Pre-  
ter tense.

Participles of the Preter tense and passive signification end in *ado*, *ido*, or *ydo*, which in the first coniugation are formed of the thirde person of the Present tense of the Indicative mode, by adding to *do*, as *Revela*, *revelado*: *Amo*, *amado*: *Castiga*, *castigado*: and in the seconde and thirde coniugation of the same Present tense, by chaunging *e*, into *ido*, and *ydo*, as *Entiende*, *entendido*: *Lée*, *leydo*: *Crée*, *creydo*: *Pide*, *pedido*.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the woide) without rule, as *Factus*, *fecho*, made, *Dictus*, *Dicho*, *said*, *spoken*.

Participle  
of the fu-  
ture tense.

The future tense with this Verbe *Ha*, or *Espera*, and the Infinitive of the Verbe, as *El que ha o: Espera de revelar*, *Entender*, or, *oyr*: *Revelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, about to reveale, about to understand, about to heare.

## Participle of Present tense and active signification.

Pres.

*El que revela*, *entiende*, *oye*, *Latin Revelans*, *Intelligens*, *Audiens*, *Revealing*, *understanding*, *hearing*.

## Participle of the Preter tense and passive signification.

Preter.

*Revelado*, *Entendido*, *oydo*, *Latin Revelatus*, *Intellectus*, *Auditus*, *Revealed*, *understood*, *heard*.

## Participle of the Future tense.

Future.

*El que ha o: espera de revelar*, *Entender*, or, *Latin Revelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, *to reveale hereafter*, *to understand hereafter*, *to heare hereafter*.

## Of Aduerbes.

Aduerbes  
formed of  
Nounes of  
the femi-  
nine gender  
in a.  
Nota.

**I** have handled before the fower parts of speech declined. Now come we to the other fower undeclined, called Indeclinable, beginning first with the Aduerbes, whereof some in the Spanish tongue are formed of Nounes of the feminine gender in *a*, as are almost all the Aduerbes of Qualitie, as *Alta*, high; *Altamente*, highlie; *Graciosa*, graciously; *graciosamente*, graciously; *Luenga*, *luengamente*; in *Latin Div*, long: which manner of forming the Italian likewise obserueth, as *Gratiosamente*, *Longamente*, *Sauamente*, so both the French, making the woide to ende in *Ment*, as *Gratieusement*, *Longuement*, *Sagement*. Wherefore I thinke good to set downe the Aduerbes following and the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latin, and last English: euerie one separated one from another with this crooked line thus, ] Aduerbes some be



### Of Aduerbes.

of Qualitie. { Fielmente, ] *Fidelmente,* ] *Fidelement,* ] *Fideliter,* ] *Faithfully.*  
 { Buénamente, or bien ] *Bene,* ] *Bien,* ] *Bene,* ] *Well.*  
 { Malamente, or mal, ] *Male,* ] *Mauaisement,* ] *Male,* ] *Ill.*  
 { De buena gana ] *Di buona voglia,* ] *Voluntiers, de bon cuer,* ] *Libenter,* ] *Willingly.*  
*Volontiers; voluntariamente.*

of Quantific.  
 Mucho,] *Molto*,] *Beaucoup*,] *Multum* vel *Multo*,] *Much*.  
 Poco,] *Poco*,] *Peu*,] *Parum* vel *Paululum*,] *Little*.  
 Mucho mas,] *Via via*,] *Beaucoup plus*,] *Muito magis*,] *Much more*.  
 Mas,] *Piu*,] *Plus*,] *Magis*,] *More*.  
 Por de mas,] *Troppo*,] *Trop*,] *Nimis*,] *to Much*.  
 Demasiado,] *Troppo* *Trop*,] *Nimis*,] *to Much*.

Ouy, ] *Hoggi,*] Aujourd'huy, ] *Hodie,*] *To daie.*  
 Ayer, ] *Hieri ieri,*] Hier, ] *Hieri,*] *Yesterday.*  
 Mañana, ] *Domani,*] Demain, ] *Cra,*] *To morrowe.*  
 Antier, ] *Antieri,*] Deuant hier, ] *Pridie,*] *The other day.*  
 El dia siguiente, ] *Il seguente giorno,*] Le lendemain, ] *Postridie,*] *The next daie after to morrowe.*  
 Mucho ha, ] *Molto fa,*] Deja long temps, ] *Iamdud,*] *Long since.*  
 Poco ha, ] *Poco fa,*] Nagueres, ] *Iamdudum,*] *A little since.*  
 Agora, ] *or, ora,*] acell heure, ] *Iamiam,*] *Euen now.*  
 Antes ] *Inaoz,*] Deuant, ] *Ante,*] *Before.*  
 Luégo, ] *Presto, Tosto,*] Soudainement, ] *Illico, statim,*] *Forwithwith, by and by.*  
 Nunca, ] *Giamai,*] Jamais, ] *Nunquam,*] *Never.*  
 Quando, ] *Quando,*] Quand, ] *Quando,*] *When.*  
 Siémpre, ] *Sempre,*] Tousjours, ] *Semper,*] *Iwaies.*  
 Entónces, ] *Al hora,*] Donques, ] *Tunc,*] *Then.*  
 Mientras, ] *Mentre,*] Cependant, ] *Interim,*] *In the meane while.*  
 Súbito, ] *Subito,*] Soudainement, ] *Subito,*] *Sodainly.*  
 Muchas vezes, ] *Molte volte,*] *Molte fiate,*] Fort souent, ] *Sape,*] *Ueris often.*  
 Pocas vezés, ] *Kade volte,*] Peu souent, ] *Raro,*] *Seldome.*  
 Algunas vezes, ] *Qual che volte,*] Quelquefois, ] *Aliquando,*] *Sometimes.*  
 Qualche fiate,

A QVI,] *Qui, quia, ci,*] Icy,] *Hic, huc,*] **Here.**  
 Aý, alli, alla,] *Iui, la, cola, quini,*] La, aude la,] *Illic,*] **There.**  
 A Donde,] *Doue, que,*] Ou,] *Vbi, quo,*] **Whither, where.**  
 De Donde,] *Onde, donde,*] Dont, d'ou,] *Vnde,*] **from whence.**  
 Acá,] *Di qua,*] Par icy,] *Hac,*] **this way.**  
 Acullá,] *Cola per costá,*] Par delá,] *Istac istuc,*] **that way.**  
 De aquí,] *De qui, Quinci,*] De quí,] *Hinc,*] **from hence.**  
 De allí, de allá,] *Indi, di la, Quinda,*] Delá,] *Illic,*] **from hence.**  
 Dentro,] *Dentro, entro,*] Dedans,] *Intus,*] **within.**  
 Fuéra,] *Fuori, di fuori,*] Hors, de hors,] *Foris, foras,*] **without.**  
 of Place. **Delante,**] *Inanzi,*] **Deuant,**] *Ante,*] **Before.**  
 Attrás,] *Dietro,*] **Derrier,**] *Post,*] **Behind.**  
 A parte,] *De banda,*] *al'elc art,*] *Separatim, forsum,*] **afide, a part, by it selfe.**  
 Arriba,] *Sopra, disopra, In su, soso,*] Enhaut,] *Sursum,*] **Above.**  
 Abáxo,] *In giu, giuso, sotto, di sotto,*] En bas,] *Deorsum,*] **Beneath.**  
 Cerca,] *Intorno, dattorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circiter,*] **A bout, nigh vnto, almost.**  
 Cabe, lunto,] *Apresso, damicino,*] Prest, supres,] *Prope,*] **Nere vnto.**  
 Léxos,] *Lontano, di lumbi,*] Loín,] *Procul,*] **Far off.**  
 Encima,] *Su, sopra,*] Sur, dessus,] *Super,*] **Upon.**  
 So,] *Sotto, disotto,*] Desslous,] *Subter,*] **Under.**

of Affirming { *SI, as Si Senor, ] Si, as Signore Si, ] Ouy, as ouy Mounſieur, ] Ita, iſa Domine, Vea, pea ſr.*  
*Cierto, ciertamente, ] Certo, certamente, ] Certes, ] Certé, certo, ] Truly.*  
*En verdad, verdaderamente, ] In verita, di vero, in vero, ] Vrayement, en verite, certaine-*  
*ment, ] Verè, ] Truly, in truth, verily.*  
*Tambien, ] Si bene, etiaudio, ancor, anche, ] Si bien, ainſi, auſſi, ] Etiam, quoque, ] al-*  
*well.*  
*Antes, ] Pin toſto, ] Pluſtoſt, ] Potius, ] Rather.*

of

- of Denying. [NO,] *Non, no, ne,* ] Non, neny, pas, point, ] *Non hand, minime,* ] *Not.*  
 Nada, No nada, ] *Niente, nulla,* ] Rien, ] *Nihil,* ] *Nothing, nothing at all.*  
 Ni, Tam poco, ] *Né,* ] Ni, ne, ] *Neque,* ] *Neither.*
- of numbring. [VNAVEZ,] *Vna volta, Vna fiata,* ] Vne fois, ] *Semel,* ] *Once.*  
 Dos vezes, ] *Due volte, Due fiata,* ] Deux fois, ] *Bi,* ] *Twice.*  
 Tres vezes, ] *Tre volte, tre fiata,* ] Trois fois, ] *Ter,* ] *Thrice, &c. as in the Pronounce*  
*before of Numbers.*  
 Muchas vezes, ] *Spesso volte, molte fiata,* ] Beaucoup de fois, ] *Sape,* ] *Often times.*  
 Pocas vezes, ] *Rade volte,* ] Rarement, ] *Rare,* ] *Seldome.*
- of Shewing. [HEA QVI,] *Ecco,* ] Voicy, voila, ] *Ecce,* ] *Behold.*
- of Encouraging. [EA, EA Pues,] *Su, corrággio,* ] Sus, courage, ] *Age, perge,* ] *Go to then.*
- of encreasing. [MAS,] *Piu,* ] Plus, ] *Plus,* ] *More.*  
 Mucho mas, ] *Molto piu, molto assai,* ] Beaucoup plus, ] *Multo magis,* ] *Much more.*  
 De maláido, ] *Troppo, di souerchio,* ] Trop, ] *Nimium,* ] *Too much.*
- of Diminishing. [MENOS,] *Meno,* ] Moins, ] *Paulo minus,* ] *Little.*  
 Poco a Poco, ] *Poco, a Poco,* ] Peu a Peu, ] *Paulatim,* ] *By little and little.*  
 Passo, ] *Pian, piano,* ] Tout bellement, Petit a petit, ] *Sensim,* ] *Soft and faire.*
- of wishing. [OXALA,] *O Dio voglia, Dio volesse,* ] Pleust a Dieu, ] *Vinam,* ] *Would to God,*  
*I pray God.*  
 O Si, ] *O se, O se,* ] Pleust a Dieu que, ] *Vinam,* ] *Would to God, I pray God.*
- of Asking. [PORQVE?] *Perche?* ] Pourquoi? ] *Quare?* ] *Why? Wherefore?*  
 Que? ] *Che?* ] Quoy? ] *Quid?* ] *What?*  
 Donde? ] *Oue?* ] Ou, ] *Vbi, quo,* ] *Where.*  
 Adonde, ] *Doue,* ] Ou, ] *Quo,* ] *Whether.*  
 De Donde, ] *Onde,* ] D'ou, dont, ] *Vnde,* ] *From whence.*  
 Quando? ] *Quando?* ] Quand? ] *Quando?* ] *When.*
- of doubting. [QVI & A,] *Forse, a caso,* ] Fortuitement, ] *Fortassis,* ] *Perhaps.*  
 Porventura, ] *Perauentura,* ] Parauenture, ] *Fortasse,* ] *Peraduenture, Perhaps.*
- of Order. [DESPVE'S,] *Poi, dipoi, Dopo, dopo,* ] Apres, depuis, ] *Post,* ] *After.*  
 Allénde de esto, ] *Oltra a cio, oltra a questo,* ] Ontre ce, d'aduantage, ] *Praterca,* ] *Furthermore.*  
 Finalmente, ] *Alla fine,* ] En fin, Finablement, ] *Tandem,* ] *At length.*
- of Likeness. [CO'MO,] *Comme,* ] Comme, ] *Sicut, velut,* ] *As.*  
 Assi, ] *Cosi,* ] Ainli, ] *Ita, sic,* ] *So.*
- of Chance. [A CASO, Pordicho,] *A caso,* ] Fortuitement, ] *Fortuito,* ] *By chance, by hap.*
- of Comparison. [MAS,] *Piu,* ] Plus, ] *Plus,* ] *More.*  
 Méno, ] *Meno,* ] Moins, ] *Minus,* ] *Little.*  
 Mucho mas, ] *Via piu, Assai piu,* ] Beaucoup d'aduantage, ] *Multo magis,* ] *Much more.*  
 Mucho méno, ] *Molto meno,* ] Beaucoup moins, ] *Multo minus,* ] *Much less.*  
 Mejór, ] *Megliore,* ] Mellicur, ] *Melius,* ] *Better.*  
 Peór, ] *Peggioré,* ] Pis, ] *Peior,* ] *Worse.*  
 Todo del mundo, ] *Piu del mondo,* ] Tout le mond, ] *Maxime,* ] *Chiefly.*
- Gathering together. [IV'NTO, Iuntaménte,] *Inseme,* ] Ensemble, ] *Simul,* ] *Together.*
- Seuering. A PARTE, ] *Seperatamente,* ] A l'escart, ] *Seperatim, scorsim,* ] *Unders.*
- Choosing. [MAS Ayna,] *Piu tosto,* ] Plustost, ] *Potius,* ] *Rather.*  
 Mucho mas, ] *Molto meglio,* ] Beaucoup mieux, ] *Potius,* ] *much Rather.*
- Contrariety. [TODA vez,] *Tutta via,* ] Toutefois, ] *Tamen,* ] *Notwithstanding.*  
 Aünque, ] *Come, che, Eriandio che, Anchor che,* ] Encore, ] *Etiamsi,* ] *Although.*  
 with:

withdrawing. {ALOMÉnos,] *Alméno, alménco,*] *Au moins,*] *At the least.*  
 {Sólo,] *Solo,*] *Seul,*] *Sulám,*] *Onely.*  
 {Porque,] *Par, accioche, che,*] *Pourceque,*] *Propterea,*] *For that*

## Of a Coniunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioineth parts of speech together, and is with the Spaniard almost in the same manner as the Latin, saving they haue not so many, but yet some are

*conjunctio*  
*conjunctionis*  
*conjunctionis*

of coupling as {Y, and E,] *e,*] *et, And.*  
 {Como,] *Comme,*] *Comme,*] *Is.*  
 {Tambien,] *Ancor, Ancho, Etandio,*] *Si bien, ainsi, aussi,*] *Etiám, Quoq[ue],*] *Also.*

Nota.

Note that E properly is not a Spanish Coniunction, but onely vsed for the Y, when the worde following beginneth with a Y, because two Y Y, shoulde not come together, La ley e la Justicia, and not La ley y la Justicia, but otherwise alwaies vse Y.

of Disioyn- {Ni] *Ni,*] *Ne,*] *Nor, Neque,*] *Neither.*  
 ing. {O,] *O, ouero,*] *Ou,*] *Aut, Ve, Vel, Seu, Sine,*] *Either.*

of Causing. [PORQVE,] *Accioche, Percioche,*] *Pourceque,*] *Propterea quod,*] *For that, wherefore.*

of Condition- {SI,] *Se,*] *Si,*] *Si,*] *If.*  
 ning. {Dado que,] *Se cõs,*] *Si aussi,*] *Si ita,*] *If so.*

of Except- {SINO,] *Se non,*] *Si non,*] *Except, if not.*  
 ting. {Mas,] *Ma,*] *Mais,*] *Quin,*] *But.*  
 {Oraménte,] *Akramente,*] *Aurapent,*] *Alioquin,*] *Otherwise.*

of Diminishing. [ALOMENOS,] *Alméno, Alménco,*] *Au moins,*] *Saltem,*] *At least.*

[AVNQVE,] *Ancorche, Quantunche,*] *Encore,*] *Et si quamquam,*] *Although.*  
*Benché, Etandio,*] *Quamuis,*

[TODA via,] *Tutta via, Tutta volta,*] *Toutefois,*] *Tamen, esto,*] *Notwithstanding.*  
*Nondimeno, Nondimanco,*  
*Nientidémén,*

## A Preposition.

Preposition. The Spanish hath the same vse of Prepositions as the Latins haue, sometimes by composition with another worde, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to ouerturne: Hazér, to do, Rechazér, to renewe, &c. Sometime by apposition (as the Latins doe) by putting the Preposition before the Noun, as Ala corte, to the court: Por el Rey, for the king: En la yglesia, in the church.

Nota.

Note that this Preposition De, or Des, alwaies makes the worde that it is ioyned with, of a quite contrary signification, as Hazér, to do: Des hazér, to vndo: Atár, to tie or bind: Desatár, to vntie: Canfado, swarie: Descanfado, resting: Dicha, happines: Desdicha, unhappines, misfortune: And so in the French, Faire, to do: Desfaire, to vndo: Lier, to binde, Deslier, to vnbinde, &c. Prepositions of the Spanish thus,

A,] *A,*] *Ad,*] *Ad,*] *To, as A fe, ala fe,*] *Afede, Afe,*] *Par ma foy,*] *Per fidem,*] *By my troth.*

De,] *De, de da,*] *De, du,*] *De,*] *Of or from,*] *as De la corte,*] *De la corte,*] *Du palais,*] *From the court.*

Para,] *Per,*] *Pour,*] *Propter,*] *For, as Para mi,*] *Per me,*] *Pour moy,*] *Propter me,*] *For me.*

Por,] *Per,*] *Par,*] *Per,*] *For, by or thowow, as Por mi vida,*] *Per mia vita,*] *Par ma vic,*] *Per vitam,*] *By my life.*

h i

[Contra,





**I** Haue for the Learners vse desirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, gathering out of them the hard phrases and manner of speech, the vncouth sayings, together with some prouerbes, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie of the tongue) and explained them in English, commonly setting downe first the English word for word as the Spanish is, then this *i.* for Latin, *id est*, that is to say, for the sense and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the booke, that by these the Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe I set downe *fol.* and *a.* signifieth the first side of the leafe, and *b.* the second, *lin.* signifieth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you see *1. part.* it is for the first volume or part of the booke, and *2. part.* for the second, &c.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of DIANA  
of Monte Mayor in 16. printed at Antwerpe 1580.

- Los de mas. fol. 3. b. lin. 14. **The rest.**  
 Las horas que se sobrávan. fol. 4. b. lin. 2. **The howers which remained, or The rest of the howers.**  
 Tomando a vézes. fol. 4. b. lin. 6. **Taking by fits or turnes.**  
 Passar por el pienamiento. fol. 4. b. lin. 14. and 7. a. lin. 25. and 26. b. 2. **To enter into the minde or thought.**  
 Tam pócole dáva péna. fol. 4. b. lin. 17. **Neither did it grieue or trouble him.**  
 A vuestro salvo. fol. 6. b. lin. 17. **Your selfe being safe, or without your owne danger.**  
 Como los ouiste a las manos? fol. 10. b. lin. 5. **How came they to your hands? or how came you by them?**  
 Por tu vida. fol. 10. b. lin. 21. **By thy life, i. I pray thee hartly.**  
 Tomar de córo. fol. 10. b. lin. 23. **To take by quire, i. To haue by memorie, hart, or without booke.**  
 Favorecér me a mi fol. 11. b. lin. 5. and Me moviera a mi. fol. 2. a. lin. 8. **To fauour me and did moue me. Here the Spanish bleth two accusatiue cases after the verbe, both of the person: and not as the Latin, one of the person and another of the thing.**  
 Despues que te fuiste. fol. 11. b. lin. 21. **After thou wentest.**  
 Yo fuí, tu fuí, se, aquel fué, nos fuýnos, fuýstes, fuéron. **I went, thou wentest, he went, we went, ye went, they went. This fuy, fuýste, commeth of the Infinitive mode *ir*, to go, and the very same fuy, fuiste, fue, &c. commeth of the Infinitive mode *Ser*, to be: but looke backe in the Grammar and compare the two verbes together.**  
 De ay a un póco. fol. 11. b. lin. 28. **A prettie while after.**  
 Que es del? fol. 12. a. lin. 20. **Where is he? What is become of him?**  
 Quando se póne el Sol. fol. 13. a. lin. 8. **When the sunne sets.**  
 Fuera de mí, fuera de ti, fuera de sí. fol. 13. b. lin. 14. **Besides my selfe, besides thy selfe, besides himselfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.**  
 Tén punto. fol. 13. b. lin. 24. **Stay, hold, stop. Giue me leaue a little.**  
 Le va bien, le va mal. fol. 15. a. lin. 7. **It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well, he is ill.**  
 Mucho a. **A good while since.**  
 Mucho avía, mucho úvo, mucho avrá. fol. 17. a. lin. 4. **It was a good while agoe, it hath been a good while since, it shall or will be long agoe.**  
 Póco ha or Póco fa. **A little while agoe, or a little since.**  
 Poco avía, Poco úvo, Poco avrá. **It was a little since, it hath been but a little since, it shall or will be but a little while agoe.**  
 Muchos dias acá, Pocos dias acá. fol. 17. a. lin. 7. **Many daies since, a few daies since.**  
 Mucho tiempo há, Poco tiempo há. **A good while agoe, a little while agoe.**  
 Grandes dias há, Pocos dias há. **A great while agoe, a few daies past.**  
 Cosa en la vida. fol. 17. a. lin. 12. **A ny thing in the world.**  
 Hazér caso. fol. 17. b. lin. 21. **To esteeme of, to make matter of.**  
 Muchos ay, or Ay muchos. fol. 20. a. lin. 6. **There are many.**  
 Que os téngo dicho. fol. 20. a. lin. 29. **Which I haue told you.**  
 Quiso mi ventura. pag. 21. a. lin. 11. **My fortune would haue it so.**  
 Que de oro no les llevara ventaja. fol. 21. a. lin. 20. **That the bantage of golde did not**

carrie it away from them. i. Gold did not excede them in brightnes.

Yt a la mano. pag. 21. b. lin. 28. *verbatim.* To goe to ones hand. i. To stop, to stay, to let or to hinder one from doing any thing.

Desdichado de mi. fol. 22. b. lin. 6. *verbatim.* Wretched of me. i. Wretched that I am, unhappie creature I, woe is me, wretched that I am.

No te háze mucho al caso. fol. 22. b. lin. 11. It makes not much matter to thee, it concerns thee not much.

De veras. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In earnest.

De burlas. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In iest.

Toda via. fol. 23. a. lin. 2. Notwithstanding.

Hazér de industria. fol. 23. a. lin. 22. To doe of set purpose.

Plegue a Dios. fol. 23. b. lin. 5. I would to God.

De ay a ocho dias. fol. 24. b. lin. 6. Eight daies hence.

No ay cosa en la vida. fol. 25. a. lin. 14. There is nothing in the world.

Asi púto per obra. fol. 26. b. lin. 11. So he did put it in practise.

Vayan lospiros a cuéntos. fol. 10. a. lin. 21. Let sighes goe by millions.

Y quiera Dios que, &c. fol. 40. b. lin. 4. And would to God that, &c.

Ambos a dos. fol. 46. b. lin. 5. Both.

Fuéra de si. fol. 47. b. lin. 14. Besides himselfe, out of his wits.

Venir a las manos. fol. 47. b. lin. 16. to come to blowes or fight.

Como en ellos fuera la vida. fol. 48. a. lin. 11. As if thereon his life lay.

A bueltas della. fol. 48. b. lin. 13. Together therewith.

Mal aya a aquel. fol. 49. a. lin. 13. Woe be unto him.

Poner el negocio a las manos. fol. 50. b. lin. 24. To bring the matter to blowes or fight.

Que en otra cosa no entendia sino en, &c. fol. 51. b. lin. 24. *verbatim.* Which in any other matter vnderstode not, i. which thought on nothing els but, &c.

Se dexó dormir. fol. 52. a. lin. 25. *verbatim.* Let himselfe or herselfe sleepe, fell asleepe.

No se qual me créa. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. I know not which I may beleue.

Deuio sér. fol. 53. b. lin. 25. *verbatim.* It ought to be, i. it could not be otherwise.

Basta lo hécho. fol. 54. a. lin. 16. It sufficeth that it is done. Basta lo dicho, it is enough that is once spoken of, or it needs no more words.

Como supo callár. fol. 54. a. lin. 19. How she knew to holde her tongue, how well she could be mute, and not answere a word.

Ni por pensamíento en ella. fol. 54. b. lin. 13. By no meanes.

Queríeme mas que a si. fol. 55. b. lin. 1. To loue me more or better then himselfe, or herselfe.

No es de cauallero. fol. 55. b. lin. 26. It is not the part of a Gentleman.

Tenér en mucho, Tenér en poco. fol. 56. a. lin. 2. To esteeme much, or to set much by, to set little by, or esteeme little.

Y quien se lo dixo, Se lo supo encarecér de manera. fol. 56. a. lin. 25. And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplifie it in such sort.

Asi púto por obra. fol. 56. b. lin. 24. So I put it in practise, or let it a worke.

Asi me fue derécha a la corte. fol. 57. a. lin. 3. And so I went straight to the court.

Cosas no poco gustólas de oyr. fol. 57. a. lin. 5. *verbatim.* Things not little tastefull to heare, i. Things not a little delightfull to heare.

En la voz, or en la habla le conocí. fol. 57. a. lin. 25. I knew him by his voice or speech.

La música dáua a otra no a mi. fol. 58. a. lin. 20. The musick played to another and not to me.

Le déva mucho. fol. 61. a. lin. 9. *verbatim.* Oweeth him much, i. he is much beholding to him.

Esta velláca de auséncia desháze las cosas. fol. 61. a. lin. 15. This rascals absence both vndo all.

No avrá ninguna que no se piérde por vos. fol. 61. b. lin. 3. There will be none which is not lost in loue for you, i. which will not be readie to runne madde for you.

Moça bonita, or bonica. fol. 61. b. lin. 5. A good wench, a fine trull, maide or gírl.

Dár léxos de la verdád. fol. 62. b. lin. 13. to be wide or farre off from the truth.

Parecér me hía, or ía. fol. 63. a. lin. 12. It did seeme vnto me. This manner of speech in Spanish is by the figure *Epenthesis*, which is the putting in of a letter or syllable in the middle of a word, as in this Parecér me hía, for Pareceria me, It did seeme to me.

Dár vna palmáda. fol. 63. a. lin. 13. To giue ones selfe a pat or blow on the breast, or els where in signe of wounding.

Grangear favóres. fol. 66. b. lin. 5. To haue by fauours.

Perdido per amores. fol. 67. a. lin. 22. Lost for loue, madde in loue.

Si tússle servido. fol. 68. a. lin. 9. If he pleased, or liked well of.

Vn desmayo con que avia dado el alma. fol. 68. a. lin. 27. A swooning or traunce, with which he had giuen by the ghost.

Pluguér a Dios. fol. 68. b. lin. 12. Would to God.

Llegár al Alma. fol. 69. a. lin. 7. To enter into the soule, to greue at hart.

Tomó la mano de respondelle. fol. 69. a. lin. 9. *Tooke vpon her to answer her, or to take vpon her the companie to answer her.*

Pusieron la mesa. fol. 71. a. lin. 15. *They couered the table.*

El sol se pone. fol. 72. a. lin. 5. *The sun was set.*

Que áya sido parte. fol. 74. a. lin. 20. *Which hath bene the cause.*

Echar lo en burlas. fol. 76. a. lin. 5. *verbatim. To cast it off in iesting, i. To test it out.*

A todos hazia ventaja. fol. 76. a. lin. 16. *He did excell all, he did exceede or ouerpass all.*

Rogando muy encarecidamente. fol. 76. b. lin. 8. *Requesting very earnestly, very instantly.*

Fulana tiene buen áyre, Fulano, es çapateador. fol. 79. a. lin. 23. & 24. *Such a one hath a good grace or countenance, such a one is dauncer of a gigge.*

Puesto en tanta obligacion. fol. 80. a. lin. 20. *Being so much beholding or bound.*

Echada a la sombra, Echado a la cama. fol. 82. b. lin. 2. *Laid in the shadowe, cast on the bed.*

Tuviéssle por bien. fol. 82. b. lin. 8. *verbatim. Did holde for good, i. Thought well of, or took in good part.*

Mal áya amor, su arco y su fletta. fol. 83. a. lin. 11. *The diuill take Ioue, his bowe and his shaft.*

Passallos hía, or ia fol. 83. b. lin. 7. *I woulde passe them ouer. This speech by the figure Epanthesis, which is a putting betwene of a letter or syllable in the middelt of a worde, as Passallos hía, for Passaria los, I woulde passe them ouer. Also in Passallos another figure called Antisthesis, which is a writing one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitue moode into L, a thing most vsuall in the Spanish, as here Passallos for Passár los, so Hablaillos, for Hablarlos, to speake vnto them: Vellos, for Ver los, to see them: Dezillos, for Dezir los, to tell them: Oylles, or Oylos or Oyrles, or los, to heare them.*

Aviendo ydo quanto media legua. fol. 89. a. lin. 21. *Having gone about halfe a league.*

Se fue supasso a passo. fol. 84. a. lin. 6. *Went very seet and leisurely.*

Los demas de los dias. fol. 86. b. lin. 2. *The rest of the daies.*

Y en las manos sendos vasos hechos a la Romana. fol. 90. b. lin. 3. *And in their hands each one a fencerall vessell made after the Romane fashion.*

Mesas pueitas. fol. 91. a. lin. 21. *Tables couered or laide.*

Piédras engastadas. fol. 91. b. lin. 1. *Stones enchaced.*

Alcár, or quitar la mesa. fol. 91. b. lin. 4. *To take by the table.*

Vistieron a Felismena, vna ropa y balquína de fina grana, recamadas de oro de canutillo, y aljófar, vn cuera, y mangas de tela de plata. fol. 94. a. lin. 5. *They apparelled Felismena with a gowne and petticoate of fine scarlet colour imbrodered with imboist or raised golde and pearle, a callocke and sleeves of cloth of siluer.*

Estosion de redezilla. fol. 94. a. lin. 14. *A coise of net worke.*

Las paredes eran labradas de obra Mofayca. fol. 94. b. lin. 16. *The wals were wyote Jewisly worke or Turkey worke without images.*

Duare. fol. 98. b. lin. 19. *Edward.*

Mirálle bien. fol. 101. a. lin. 1. *Behold him well, by the figure Metathesis, which is a changing places of letters, for Mirálle very common in the Spanish in the Imperative moode the seconde person plural number, as Leeldo for Leed lo, Reade per it: Dezildo, for Dezid lo, Tell him that: or Dezildes for Dezid les, Tell them: so Miralda for Mirád la, Behold her: Miráldas, for Mirád las, Behold them. fol. 103. a. lin. 3.*

Ojos verdes y rasgados. fol. 103. a. lin. 28. *Faire and great eyes.*

Desde el bórea al austro. fol. 104. a. lin. 22. *From the north to the south.*

En quanto se hazia hora de cenar se fueron a vna alameda. fol. 105. a. lin. 16. *And while supper tyme came they went to a groue of poplars.*

Mediante la quel. fol. 109. a. lin. 24. *By meanes whereof.*

Gentil hombre y bien tallado. fol. 110. a. lin. 13. *A proper man and well shaped, and not for as English men call gentleman.*

Cavallorúcio rodado. fol. 110. a. lin. 15. *A horse dapple graie.*

Traya en la cinta vn alfánje. fol. 110. a. lin. 19. *He caried at his girdle a Turkie sword.*

Traya en el bráço ysqüerdo. fol. 110. a. lin. 24. *He caried on his left arme.*

Bolvér sobre sí. fol. 110. b. lin. 21. *To come to ones selfe as out of a traunce, astonishment or the like.*

Tocar un cuerno. fol. 111. a. lin. 16. *verbatim. To touch, i. To seinde a horne.*

Llevar el camino de los companeros. fol. 111. a. lin. 19. *verbatim. To carrie the way of his fellows, i. To take the same way, to be serued with the same sauce, to drinke of the same cup.*

Tuvo lo en mucho. fol. 113. a. lin. 9. *He much esteemed it.*

De ay algunos dias. fol. 116. a. lin. 18. *From hence a few daies.*

Tenerme campo. fol. 119. a. lin. 5. *verbatim. To hold me field, i. To be able to stand with me or fight with me.*

Hazer campo. *verbatim. To make field, i. To combat, to fight.*

No sé lo que hará de mí. fol. 119. a. lin. 18. *I know not what shall become of me.*



Tenéd entendido. fol. 126. b. lin. 2. *verbatim.* *Hold vnderstand. i. vnderstand.*

Ambas a dos. fol. 126. b. lin. 27. *Both.*

Pléga a Dios. fol. 130. b. lin. 24. *I would to God.*

Por lo poco que se dáva por el. fol. 133. a. lin. 23. *For the little esteeme he made of him.*

No se me da náda. *verbatim.* *It giues nothing to me. i. I care not.*

Avrá como cinco o seys meses. fol. 147. a. lin. 3. *It shall be some five or six monethes.*

Cosa en que tan poco te yva. fol. 149. a. lin. 19. *A thing which so little did import thee.*

Me a dado de mano. fol. 150. a. lin. 26. *He hath taken his leaue of me.*

Fálda de unas montañas. fol. 157. b. lin. 13. *verbatim.* *the skirt. i. The side or hanging of an hill.*

Vino a dar en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alifos y azebúches allaz poblado. fol. 158. a. lin. 2. *He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently storied with greene fallowes and wilde olives.*

Y de súbito fue a dar con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudad, que desde de lo alto de una sierra, que de frente estáva. fol. 158. a. lin. 6. *And vpon a sudden he espied a faire citie from the top of a mountaine, which was right against them.*

Se fué su passo a passo por una senda que junto a l río yva házia la parte. fol. 158. b. lin. 6. *He went faire and soft in a path which lead nere the riuer toward that part, &c.*

Sobre las cabeças, tenían sendas guiraldas de verde yedra. fol. 158. b. lin. 18. *Upon their heads they had each of them severall garlands of greene iuie.*

Con cierto desdén y un dar de mano. fol. 160. a. lin. 12. *With a certaine disdain and putting from with the hand.*

Dize pues que su muger es finada que me case con el? fol. 160. a. lin. 24. *Saith he, seeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?*

Paréd en medio bivir. fol. 190. b. lin. 28. *To live at the next wall, but one wall betwene.*

Parár mientes. fol. 193. a. lin. 21. *To marke, to heede.*

Plazér acabado. fol. 226. a. lin. 12. *Complete or full top or pleasure quite ended.*

### Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encaminár obras a personas de lustre. fol. 2. a. lin. 5. *To direct woorkes to persons of fame.*

Si Dios fuere servido. fol. 2. b. lin. 7. *verbatim.* *If God shall be served. i. If it shall please God.*

De mi gráo jamas entenderá sino en solo loáros. fol. 3. a. lin. 7. *By my good will I would never do any thing else but praise you.*

Vaya fuera toda arrogancia. fol. 3. b. lin. 12. *All pride set aside.*

Como a cada uno complia. fol. 7. a. lin. 2. *As was meete for every one.*

No les comple yste. fol. 7. b. lin. 20. *It is not meete they goe.*

Con el si del matrimonio. fol. 8. a. lin. 26. *With the answering to the minister yea at the marriage.*

Vámonos. fol. 10. a. lin. 10. *Let vs goe, for. Vamos nos.*

Dexémonos. fol. 19. a. lin. 22. *Let vs leaue, for. Dexémos nos.*

Amatár la sed. fol. 10. a. lin. 20. *To quench thirst.*

Por una cuesta abaxo. fol. 11. b. lin. 11. *Downhill.*

A vézes. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. *By turnes, by fits.*

O vala me Dios. fol. 22. a. lin. 6. *God helpe me.*

Pluguiéra a Dios. fol. 22. a. lin. 17. *I would to God.*

Dado que. fol. 22. b. lin. 21. *Grant that, suppose that.*

Mercéd señalada. fol. 28. b. lin. 26. *A notable curtesie.*

El traydór del Cupido. fol. 36. b. lin. penultima. *The traitor Cupide.*

Tenér en mucho. fol. 38. b. lin. 1. *To esteeme much of.*

### Wordes, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of Celestina in 8.

printed at Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniana

Anno 1595.

De mas. pag. 1. lin. 5. *Over and above, besides, moreover.*

Recebido tienen. pag. 3. lin. 6. *verbatim.* *They hold received. i. They haue received.*

Tenér la firma del autor. pag. 4. lin. 21. *To haue the authoys name to it.*

Leeldo. pag. 8. lin. 9. *Read it, by the figure Metathesis, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanishe in the seconde person plural of the Imperatine moode, as thus Leeldo for Leed lo, as Castigaldo, chastise him, for Castigad lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedidle, Oylde, heare him, for oyd le.*

A todo correr devéis de huir. pag. 10. lin. 11. *verbatim.* *With all running away you ought to auoide. i. With all haste possible to run or flye.*



En quien quèpa esta diferèncja. pag. 17. lin. 4. In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Confèja tras de fuego. pag. 13. lin. 3. A tale by the fires side, an old winters tale.

Ofrecido tenér. pag. 22. lin. 13. verbatim. To hold offered. i. To haue offered.

Vete, vete de ay. pag. 23. lin. 18. Get thee hence, get thee hence.

Abatíose el girafalte. pag. 23. lin. 28. The Gerfaulcon bated.

Los Diablos te gánen. pag. 24. lin. 1. The Deuill take thee.

Que cosa es? pag. 24. lin. 20. What is the matter?

Dexárla he? pag. 25. lin. 2. Shall I leaue him?

Matárla ha. pag. 25. lin. 3. He is to kill himselfe, or he will kill himselfe.

Desbráve, Madúre. pag. 25. lin. 15. Let him pacifie or calme himselfe, let him ripen or come to a head.

Si delante me tiéne. pag. 25. lin. 22. If he haue me before him.

Mudár el pelo malo. pag. 25. lin. 29. To change ill fortune.

Ves lo aqui. pag. 26. lin. 15. See it here.

De la aparèncja a la existèncja. pag. 27. lin. 14. From that which seemes to be, to that which is indeede.

No cabe en coraçón de mi ámo. pag. 28. lin. 6. It is not within the compasse of my masters hart.

Que por la boca le sale a borbollones. pag. 28. lin. 6. But that it must bubble out of his mouth.

Ha, ha, ha, & Hi, hi, hi. pag. 28. lin. 14. Voices of laughing.

Asseltár tiros. pag. 28. lin. 17. To aime.

Elcozióte. pag. 30. lin. 27. It touchte you, it made you smart.

Metér por los agujeros. pag. 32. lin. 25. verbatim. To put into holes, i. to take in at windows.

Desque se descúbrén. pag. 33. lin. 12. From the time they discover themselves.

Catívo de mí, Melquino de mí. pag. 34. lin. 20. Wretch that I am.

Assí me médre Dios, Assí me médre Dios. pag. 34. lin. 23. verbatim. So God make me thine, i. So God helpe me or prosper me.

Duelos tenemos. pag. 34. lin. 28. We haue mournings in hand.

Ojos verdes y rasgados. pag. 35. lin. 14. Faire and great eyes.

La tez liza y lustrosa. pag. 35. lin. 24. The skin smooth and cleere.

Buen ándo haze esto. pag. 37. lin. 8. This makes good going forward.

Dias grándes ha, & Muchos dias ha. pag. 37. lin. 5. A good while since.

Quede Dios con v.m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God be with you, or God remaine with you.

Dios vaya con v.m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God conduct, or be your speed.

Vaya v.m. con Dios. Goe in Gods name.

Que es del? pag. 38. lin. 15. What is become of him? Where is he?

Hi, hi, hi. pag. 39. lin. 2. A voice of laughing.

Tres dias ha. pag. 39. lin. 4. It hath bene thre daies.

Vo, for Voy. pag. 39. lin. 12. I goe.

Por mi vida, Por tu vida. pag. 39. lin. 27. I pray thee hartily.

Quedate a Dios. pag. 40. lin. 11. God remaine with you, or keepe you.

Sey, for Se tu. pag. 40. lin. 21. Be thou.

No púde desleír bien, de que no te cupiéste parte. pag. 41. lin. 1. I could not so much as desire, as with any goodness, in which thy part was not contained therein.

Si quiera, for Solamente. pag. 41. lin. 4.

Gelo prometí. pag. 41. lin. 28. I promised him it or that, for Se lo prometí.

Tha, tha, tha. pag. 42. lin. 3. The noise or beating of the knocking at a doore.

O que comedór de huévos assados. pag. 43. lin. 21. Oh what a eater of roasted egges.

De que le servias? pag. 44. lin. 4. In what place or office diddest thou serue her in?

Curar de punto. pag. 47. lin. 18. To heale or cure with stitching vp, as with needle and thred.

Téngote lo en gracia, or merced. pag. 48. lin. 24. I thanke thee for it.

Como quiera. pag. 49. lin. 29. Howsoeuer.

Dar en el fiel. pag. 51. lin. 4. To hit the pricke at shooting.

Para mi santiguada. pag. 51. lin. 13. By my halldome.

Do vino el asno, verná el albarda. pag. 51. lin. 13. verbatim. Where the asse is come, the packe saddle will come. i. Where the greater doth pécide, the lesse must of necessitie come after.

**A**fter I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardest speeches and explaining them for the learners vic, and being come thus farre in *Celestine*, as you see, it came into my imagination that running thorow him and such other hard authors, by vnfoldng so open to euerie ones view

view the difficultest points in the tooing, might breede some dislike in men of mine owne profession (to whom I wish as to my selfe) as also little thankfulness of others, who hauing their turns serued, do commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe some to sweeten their mouthes heereafter, as they shall be desirous heereof, and the rather, for that notwithstanding all this and more paines to, with cost out of my purse, neglecting my profession and liuing, I haue alreadie before I came neere the presse, tasted and had some experience of some of the greater sorte (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which neuer sawe any thing of my dooing in their life, or heard mee speake, by discourteous dealing enough to discourage mee from the publishing of any thing, to pleasure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more curteous disposed, I heere go so farre with the Englishing heereof, and some prouerbes following, whose curtesie if friendly I finde, may cause me to the farther vnfolding of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes*  
in 8 printed in *Antwerpe En la oficina Plantimiana*,  
*Anno M. D. XCV.*

Lo que uno no come, otro se pierde por ello. pag. 2. lin. 13. That which one eateth not, another is lost for it, or longeth after it.  
No ser mas santo que mis vezinos. pag. 5. lin. 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.  
Achacaron a mi padre ciertas sangrias mal hechas en los costales. pag. 7. lin. 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine ripping the sides of the sacks.  
Arrimár a los buenos. pag. 8. lin. 7. pag. 91. lin. 1. To leane or stay ones selfe vpon the good.  
Echar la fogatras el caldero. pag. 10. lin. 12. verbatim. To cast the rope after the caldron. i. To cast the helue after the hatchet.  
Vale re por ti. pag. 11. lin. 16. verbatim. He of auaille for thy selfe. i. Shift for thy selfe.  
Par de una cosa. pag. 11. lin. 26. Just euen with any thing.  
Mas da el duro que el desnudo. pag. 19. lin. 28. verbatim. More giueth the hard then the naked. i. More giueth the miser or curmudgeon then he that hath it not to giue.  
Escapé del trueno y di en el Relampágo. pag. 28. lin. 23. I escaped the thunder and fell into the lightning.  
No poder tener en las piernas. pag. 30. lin. 25. Not to be able to stand vpon the legs.  
Dar el reló a una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 49. lin. 15. The cloke to strike one, two or thre.  
Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 50. lin. 25. It hath stroke one a clocke, two a clocke, thre a clocke.  
En un crédo. pag. 57. lin. 14. In the twinkling of an eie.  
Uña de vaca. pag. 62. lin. 1. A neates foot.  
La bolsa sin maldita la blanca. pag. 65. lin. 16. The diuell a penny in his purse.  
Oy dia. pag. 65. lin. 24. At this day.  
Quebrémos el ojo al Diáblo. pag. 66. lin. 7. Let vs breake the necke of the Deuill.  
Voto o boto a Dios. pag. 70. lin. 4. I so care by God.  
Del rey abaxo. pag. 71. lin. 6. From the king downward.  
Romper çapatos. pag. 77. lin. 13. To weare out shooes.  
Lançar del el demonio. pag. 85. lin. 8. To cast out the diuell from him.  
Matar con un hombre. pag. 92. lin. 6. To fight with a man.  
Quien bien te hará o se yrá o se morirá. pag. 94. lin. 7. He that shall or will doe thee a good turne, either he will be gon, or he will die.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *Menoprecio de la Corte*,  
or in French *Mespris de la Court* in 16. printed An. M. D. XCI.  
per Ichan de Tournes.

Yr me a mia la mano. pag. 70. lin. 19. verbatim. To goe me to my hand. i. To hinder, let or stop my selfe.  
Ir por el atágo. pag. 93. lin. 14. To goe t he shortest way.  
Dar de mano a la corte. pag. 127. lin. 20. To shake hands or take leane of the Court.

Dár la corte a Dios. pag. 137. lin. 10. *To bid the court farewell.*  
 Andár en cuerpo. pag. 197. lin. 1. *To goe in hofe and doublet without a cloake.*  
 No es de paſſár entre renglones. pag. 200. lin. 20. *It is not to be left obſcurely, or it is to be plainly written or ſet downe.*  
 Verdúra para la olla. pag. 202. lin. 19. *Hearbes for the pot, pothearbes.*  
 Bevé de bucos. pag. 209. lin. 5. *To drinke as an oxe or ſuch beaſtes.*  
 Jugár al herrón. pag. 227. lin. 13. *To play at coites.*  
 Corré vn toro. pag. 228. lin. 3. *Do baite a bull.*  
 A paréd y medio. pared en medio. com. Plauto. fol. 4. b. lin. 18. pag. 234. lin. 13. *The next wall to one, But a wall betwene.*  
 Clérigo lin breuiário. pag. 259. lin. 8. *A prieſt without a bzuiarie.*  
 Ruár calles. pag. 273. lin. 14. *To gad about the ſtreets.*  
 A penas. 289. lin. 20. *Hardly.*  
 Embocár la bola al juego de argólla. pag. 360. lin. 2. *To caſt the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla, i. A ring.*  
 Tirár coques. pag. 380. lin. 10. *To kicke.*  
 Traér de tema la gorra. pag. 388. lin. 12. *To ſet his hat to the good aleward, on one ſide the head.*  
 Soſpecho que ſon pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. pag. 406. lin. 1. *I ſuſpect there are few and very few, yea moſt few, yea feweſt of all.*

Wordes, Phraſes, Sentences, and Prouerbes out of *Floreſta*  
*Eſpañola, in 16. Printed in Salamanca, 1592.*

Estoy maravillado. *Epist. dedicatoria. pag. 2. lin. 9. I wonder, I marueile.*  
 El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava. fol. 6. b. lin. 4. *verbatim. That kindred that had had a crowne in it neuer thyned. i. a pueſt.*  
 Mas pareçe chichón, que Cardenal. fol. 7. b. lin. 1. *It ſeemed rather a whelke or puſtle then a ſtripe blacke and blew.*  
 Rézias cámaras. fol. 11. a. lin. 18. *Strong ſtoings.*  
 Macho de ſilla. fol. 13. a. lin. 15. *I nagge.*  
 Vn hombre de gran memoria ſin letras, tiene ruela y huſo y no eſtambre. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. *A man of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a ſpindle, and no ſtuſſe to ſpin.*  
 Bolár vna grulla o ave. fol. 43. b. lin. 5. *To ſlie at the Herron.*  
 Guiár la comida. fol. 43. b. lin. 6. *To dzeſſe meate.*  
 Deſenſillar. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. *To put out of a chaire. Iſo to vnſaddle.*  
 Vnos moços de eſpuelas. fol. 60. b. lin. 1. *Ackeies or footemen.*  
 A eſſe Page o capalde o encapalde. fol. 61. b. lin. 13. *Either geſde this page or giue a cloake.*  
 Tal cádreá vaca. fol. 74. b. lin. 2. *Such a chaire was vacant.*  
 Llámome. fol. 76. a. lin. 15. *I call my ſelfe, or I am called.*  
 Puntos de çapatos. fol. 85. b. lin. 14. *The ſitches of ſhoes, or ſize of ſhoes, as nines, tens, &c.*  
 Al freyre lo veréys. fol. 93. a. lin. penultima, *verbatim. By ſpying you ſhall ſee. i. By proſe you ſhall finde.*  
 Os demande la palabra. fol. 94. b. lin. 2. *Let him challenge your word or promiſe.*  
 Hazér quartos. fol. 90. a. lin. 3. *To quarter.*  
 Parár mientes. fol. 500. a. lin. 7. *To marke.*  
 Caldo. fol. 102. b. lin. 5. *Booth, pottage.*  
 Hazér la barba. fol. 112. a. lin. 16. *To trim the beard.*  
 De buena gana. fol. 226. b. lin. 5. *With a good will.*  
 Dezir grácias. fol. 234. a. lin. 18. *To ſpeake merrie conceits.*

Matco Aurelio.

Sublimár, abatir. pag. 11. lin. 18. *To liſt vp and to abaſe.*  
 A ley de bueno os juro. pag. 27. lin. 28. *By the faith of a good man I ſwear.*  
 Conviene a ſabér. pag. 42. lin. 16. *That is to wit.*  
 Sobrepujár. pag. 46. lin. 11. *To ouerpoſſe.*  
 Pendón de taverna. pag. 51. lin. 9. *The ſigne of a tauerne.*  
 Jugár al axedrés. pag. 59. lin. 20. *To play at Cheſſe.*  
 Poner obligación. pag. 234. lin. 26. *to binde, to make one beholding to him.*  
 Poner el águila en los pechos. pag. 245. lin. 20. *To put the Eagle on his beaſt. i. To weare the Emperours armes the Eagle.*

Armár



Armár çancadilla. pag. 256. lin. 2. *To trip.*  
 Cavallo de axedrez. pag. 279. lin. 26. *The Knight at Chess.*

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioso in 16. printed  
 at Antwerp M. D. LV.

Fletár vna náo. fol. 8. b. lin. 19. *To hire a ship and pay passage money.*  
 Hazér a lo largo en la mar. fol. 8. b. lin. 23. *To lanch into the maine at sea.*  
 Dios te pague. fol. 12. a. lin. 11. *God rewarde thee.*  
 Ponér oꝝ Hazer lumbre. fol. 17. a. lin. 23. *To make a fire.*  
 El puerco muerto sabe mas quando se come. fol. 22. a. lin. 25. *A dead hog tasteth best when he is eaten.*  
 Hermáno del leche. fol. 25. b. lin. 17. *A foster brother.*  
 Poco me doy por esso. fol. 28. b. lin. 19. *A little care I for this.*  
 Ordír tramas. fol. 29. b. lin. 8. verbatim. *To spin webs. i. To worke decreites.*

Comédia de Plauto Menechmos. in 16. bound with  
 Milite glorioso.

Para que se ténga en mas. fol. 54. b. lin. 16. *That he oꝝ it may be moze esteemed.*  
 Ambos a dos mancebos. fol. 55. b. lin. 15. *Both the young men.*  
 No perdáys palabra. fol. 56. b. lin. 10. verbatim. *Do not lose a word. i. Be attentive to that one shall say.*  
 Hazér de nueuas con alguno. fol. 67. a. lin. 19. *To make himsele strange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.*

Araucana in 16. three in one volumne, Printed in  
 Antwerp. 1597.

Cúchilla de la montaña. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 8. *The edge oꝝ ridge of a hill.*  
 Rociada dar. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 12. *To give a volley of shot.*  
 Como consta por sus obras. Elógio. pag. 7. lin. 5. *As appeareth by his workes.*  
 Medir la pica al enemigo. fol. 3. b. lin. 33. *To come to push of a pike with the enimie.*  
 Pobládos penáchos. fol. 4. a. lin. 32. *Thicke plumes of feathers.*  
 Hazérse a lo largo. fol. 3. a. lin. 10. verbatim. *To make himsele aloofe. i. To step out as men in a quarrell to draw their weapon.*  
 A rienda suelta. fol. 31. b. lin. penult. verbatim. *With a loose raine of a hydle. i. at libertie, freele, as Reyra rienda suelta. To laugh freele, at libertie.*

I would goe forward in this course of seeking hard places and phrases in Iuthors, but for that I haue now much other busines that neuer concernes me, onely certaine Prouerbes which I haue heretofore for mine owne vse gathered, and here leaue some of them to your vse, as yee shall best like them.

Refranes. Prouerbes.

First setting downe the English worde for worde according to the Spanish,  
 with this worde Verbatim. Afterwarde if it haue a sence differing  
 from the worde, the meaning thus, i. for  
 idest: that is to saie.

**N**O puede ser mas negro el cuervo que sus álas. verbatim. *The crowe can not be blacker then his wings. i. Nothing can excede the highest degree.*  
 Quien a su enemigo popa, a sus manos muere. verbatim. *Whosoever disdainfully dallies with his enimie, dies by his owne hande. i. by making no reckoning of his enimie, receaues damage.*  
 Quien cóme y dexa, dos vezes póne la mesa. verbatim. *Who dineth and leaueth for another time, couers the table twise. i. He that keepeth in store, serueth his turne when he hath neede.*  
 Gran sabor es comer y no escotar. verbatim. *It is great sauourines to dine oꝝ eate, and not to paie any shot oꝝ reckoning. i. Good drinking of wine of another mans purse.*



- La codicia rompe el saco. *verbatim.* Conetousnes burseth the bagge. *i.* neuer thinketh it full till it bpeake.
- Mas vén quatro ójos que no dos. *verbatim.* fower eyes see better then two. *i.* Two heades are better then one.
- Mas vale páxaro en máno que bueytre bolándo. *verbatim.* Better a birde in hand then a Glutur fly-  
ing. *i.* A birde in hand worth ten in the bush.
- Entre hermanos, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los desparte, lleva la peor parte. *verbat.* Betwene  
broters put not thou thy hands; for who so severs them hath the worst of it.
- Ni de estopa buen camisa, ni de puta buena amiga. *verbatim.* Neither of hurdes is made a good  
shirt, nor of a queane a good louer.
- Quien ha officio ha beneficio. *verbatim.* He that hath an occupation or office hath a benefite and a  
benefice.
- En la boca cerrada no entra mosca. *verbatim.* In a closed by mouth a sic cannot get in.
- Mas cerca están mis dientes que mis parientes. *verbatim.* My teeth are naxer to me then my kindred.  
*i.* Naxer is my coate, but naxer is my shirt.
- Mas vale ser cabeça de Ratón, que cola de León. *verbatim.* Better to be the head of a Mouse then the  
taile of a Lion. *i.* Better be chiefe in a meane place, then underling in a greater.
- Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixádas. *verbatim.* God giueth beanes to them that haue no iawes  
to eate them. *i.* God sends soles fortune.
- A cavallo comedór cabestro corto. *verbatim.* To a greedie eating horse, a short halter. *i.* To a prodig-  
gall man meane fortune: a curst cove short hoznes.
- Dime con quien ándas, y dezirte he quien éres. *verbatim.* Tell me with whom thou goest, and I will  
tell thee what thou art. *i.* Birdes of a feather will flocke together; like will to like.
- En la boca del discreto, Lo público es secreto. *verbatim.* In the wisemens mouth, That is manifest  
is kept secret.
- Piedra movediza, no cria moho. *verbatim.* The rolling stone engenders no mosse.
- Mas vale saber, que aver. *verbatim.* It is better to haue knowledge then riches.
- Quien mal en horna, saca los panes tuertos. *verbatim.* He that setteth in the bread in the oven  
naughtily, dyaweth out the loaves crushed awrie: as one brewes so let him drinke: as one  
plots so it procures.
- Quien da presto, da dos vézes. *verbatim.* He that giues quickly, giueth twise.
- Miedo guarda viña y no viñadero. *verbatim.* Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard and not the  
owner. *i.* Feare makes one loke about.
- A muertos y a ydos no ay amigos. *verbatim.* To dead men and absent there are no friendes left. *i.*  
Out of sight out of minde.
- La cóz de la yégua no haze mal al pótro. *verbatim.* The kicke of the mare hurteth not the colt. *i.*  
A friends reproue neuer doth ill.
- A vn traydor dos alcuólos. *verbatim.* To one traitor, two traitors. *i.* To ouer reach one craftie  
knaue, set two craftie knaues to him and they will cony catch him. The Italian saith, *A  
vn fino, vn fino & mezo.*
- Jurado ha el vano de negro, no hazer blanco. *verbatim.* The bath of the blackmoe hath swozne not  
to whiten. *i.* That which is byed in the done will neuer out of the flesh.
- En casa del melquino, manda mas la muger que el marido. *verbatim.* In the house of the simple soule,  
the wife commands moze then the husband. *i.*  
In the house of the silly man of necessitie and of foze:  
The graie mare will still proue the better horse.
- Es mas el ruido, que las nuezes. *verbatim.* The noise is greater then the nuts. *i.* Moze afraid then  
hurt.
- Dos pardiles en vna espiga, hazen mala liga. *verbatim.* Two sparrows on one eare of roze make an  
ill agreement. *i.* Two competiours cannot accorde.
- No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim.* The Lion is not so fierce as they paint him. *i.*  
He is such a one as he makes shewe of.
- En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cobra. *verbatim.* He is bozne in a good houre that gets him-  
selfe a good name. *i.* A good name is better then riches.
- De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedór. *verbatim.* Under a bad cloake lies a good drinker. *i.* The  
worste outwardly attired, the better inwardly lined.
- Derábo de puérco, nunca a buen viróte. *verbatim.* Of a pigges taile you can neuer make a good shaft.  
*i.* May a foote in a moxer you cannot make him leaue his folke: a clowne will neuer bee  
made a king.
- Que es esse hidalgo? El que haze las obras. *verbatim.* What is this gentleman. *i.* Who is to be a gen-  
tleman: Euen he that doth the workes of a gentleman.
- El asno sufre la carga, no la sobre carga. *verbatim.* The asse endureth his burden, but not moze then  
his burden.
- Amenzados pán cómen. *verbatim.* Threatened men eate bread. *i.* The threatened men liue long.

Piensa el ladrón, que todos son de su condición. *verbatim.* The thiefe thinketh that all are of his condition. *i.* Euerie one iudgeth another by himselfe.

Mas vale vn róna que dos te daré. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promising.

No se gana camóra en vn hora. *verbatim.* camóra (a strong towne) is not swonne in an hower. *i.* Rome was not built in a day.

Quién tiempo tiene, y tiempo atiende, tiempo viéne, que se arrepiente. *verbatim.* He that hath time; and lookez for better time, Time comes that he repent himselfe of time.

Buén coraçón quebranta mála ventura. *verbatim.* A good hart breaketh ill hap. *i.* A good hart ouercometh all.

Mundo redondo quién no sabe nadár va se en hondo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot swim let him sinke to the bottome.

Malas son las burlas verdaderas. *verbatim.* True iestes are ill. *i.* It is ill to iest at that which was done in deed.

Quién te háze fiésta, que no lo suéle hazér, o te quiere engañár, o te ha menester. *verbatim.* Who so maketh much of thee that was not wont, either will deceiue or stand in neede of thee.

Quién a sólas come el gállo, a sólas ensilla su cavállo. *verbatim.* Whosoever eates the cocke alone, saddles the horse alone. *i.* He that will keepe his meate and his money to himselfe, must doe his busines himselfe.

Ház bien y no cates a quién, haz mal y guárte. *verbatim.* Doe good and regard not to whom, doe euill and take heed of thy selfe.

Quién a buén árbol se arrima buena sombra le cobija. *verbatim.* Whosoever leaneth to a good tree, getteth a good shadow. *i.* Whosoever hath a sure man to trust vnto, hath a great pleasure.

Quien no parece peréce. *verbatim.* Who appeareth not, perisheth. *i.* Out of sight, out of munde.

Biva conmigo y búscame quien te mantenga. *verbatim.* Live with me, and seeke some other that may maintaine thee. *i.* Doe me seruire, and get maintenance where thou canst.

Hónray y provécho, no caben en vn saco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained together in one sacke. *i.* If you be honozable, you must be liberrall and not respect your money.

Quien quita l'ocasión, quita el pecádo. *verbatim.* He that taketh awaie the occasion, taketh away the offence. *i.* He that remoueth the allurements, taketh away the sinne.

La pobréza no es viléza mas inconveniència. *verbatim.* Pouertie is no vile or bitious matter, but yet an inconuenience.

Las quéntas en la máno, y el diábulo en el capillo. *verbatim.* The beades in the hand, and the diuell in his capuch or cape of his cloake. *i.* God in his mouth and the diuell in his hart: good wordes and wicked deedes.

Palabras y plúmas el viento las lléva. *verbatim.* Wordes and feathers the winde carrieth away. *i.* Wordes are but winde.

Ni Sávado sin sól ni moça sin amor, ni véjo sin dolor. *verbatim.* Neither Sabaoth without sunne, nor yong wench without loue, nor an old body without griefe or ache.

Fuégó de estópa,	Fire of flaxe,
Amór de puta,	Loue of a queane,
Viénto del culo,	Winde from the taile,
Tódo es vno,	All is one.

Guárdate	De yra de Señor y de alboróto de pueblo.	Take heed
	De lócos en lugar estrecho,	
	De hónra menguáda, y gente que no tiene náda.	
	De móça adeuina, y mugér latina.	
	De persona señaláda, y de Biúda tres vézes casáda.	
	De lódos al camínar, y de luénga enfermedád.	
	De viénto que entre per horádo, y de enemigo que sea reconciliádo.	
	De madrasta, el nombre le bástá.	

Of the wrath of a mightie man & the tumult of the people.

Of mad soles in a narrow place.

Of credit decayed, and people which haue nothing.

Of a yong wench a propheteesse, and a latin woman.

Of a person marked, & a widow thise married.

Of fowle hurtie waies and long sickness.

Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enemy.

Of a Stepmother, the very name of her sufficeth.

PLEASANT and DELIGHTFVLL  
DIALOGVES IN SPANISH

and English, profitable to the learner,  
*and not vnpleasant to any*  
other Reader.

By IOHN MINSHEU Professor  
of Languages in  
London.

*Virescit vulnere Virtus.*



Imprinted at London, by  
*Edm. Bollifant.*

1599





*Al muy illustre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby:  
su aficionado servidor Juan Minshen  
deséa salud, y perpetua felicidad.*



Vy illustre Señor, de aquel famoso pintor Apeles se cuenta, que aviendo acabado de pintar una hermosa tabla, temiendola colgada en parte pública; innumerable gente de todas suertes conbidada de la lindeza della, suspendiéron su curso, y se detuvieron a contemplarla, entre los de mas se acertó a llegar un rústico labrador, y como todos alabássen grandemente el ingenio del artífice, juntamente con la pintura: el villano con voz ronca y mal compuesta, dixo, una gran falta tiene ésta tabla; lo qual como oyesse Apeles, le preguntó qual fuese ésta? El respondió, aquella espiga sobre la qual está aquel páxaro sentado, deviera estar mas inclinada, porque conforme al peso que presuppone el páxaro y la flaqueza de la caña, no podia sustentár le sin doblarse mas, oydo esto por el pintor, vió que tenia razón el villano; y tomando el pincel, emendó luego aquella falta, siguiendo su parecer; soberbio pues el rústico con ver que se uviesse tomado su voto, passó mas adelante, y dixo, aquellos çapatos que aquella figura tiene no están buenos, a esto le respondió Apeles, Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada uno el suyo. Está figura, muy illustre señor, he querido traer, por dezir, que si todos los hombres se conformássen con lo que sáven y que su ingenio alcanza, no quisiessen passár adelante, a saber lo que no es de su profesión ny les toca, ny ellos quedarían corridos, como éste villano, ni el labrador se entremeterria a tratar de la guerra, ny el mercader de la cavallería, ny el oficial de las sciencias, ny el herrero se pondría a disputár puntos de teología; Sino que tratando cada uno aquello a que su capacidád se estienda, y no mas, seria un concierto maraviloso; que resultaria en grande utilidad de toda la república, y para esto devríamos tomár exemplo en las cosas naturales, las quales perpetuamente guardan su orden y concierto, sin entremetérse las unas a hazer el oficio de las otras, y ansi vemos que ny la tierra calienta, ny el fuego produce, ny el viento riega, ny el agua venrea, sino que cada cosa tiene su calidad y oficio particular. Pues aviéndose de guardár éste concierto y orden, a v. m. conviene y toca el juzgar de ésta mi obra, como aquel que entre todos los demas, tiene el primado de la lengua Española, segun la facilidad con que se le a dado, y la perfeccion con que la habla, però tambien en otras muchas sciencias, y facultades, en que v. m. resplandee sobre todos los de nuestro tiempo. Aquí no es de olvidar la resfulgente, rara y acabada perfeccion en hermosura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy illustre Señera Doña Margarita su muger de v. m. Dios sabe, si yo quisiera dedicár le toda la obra entera y no partida en parte, (pues quando no uviera las razones dichas para hazérlo; bastava el agradecimiento y benevolencia, que v. m. mostró al que primero emprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioso: Però el lo dexádo de hazer, por dos razones a my júyzio; la una es la obligación precisa que tengo a las personas a quien va dirigida, no solo de obediencia y amistad, sino tambien de ayuda, favor, y socorro, que me han dado para poder llegarla a su fin; y la otra razón es, a verse comenzado, profeguido,

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

quido, y acabado en su nombre, y para que se apovéchan della, en su ministerio. Però ya que lo que es mayor en cantidad tengo empleado, lo que es yqual en calidad, o fresco y dedico a. v. m. y esto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedaré seguro que los detractores no osen mordér en lo que ha sido censurado por tan primo juyzio y entendimiento, que no por la gloria o utilidad que dello se podra seguir a v. m. ultra de que con esto satisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que dévo a quien con tanta voluntad favorece a mi profesión, oficio verdaderamente proprio de hombres sabios y discretos, ansí como es de ygnorantes y poco menos que bestias, el impedir semejantes exercicios lo qual no cabe sino en hombres gruesos de entendimiento, y de conciencias, Suplico a. v. m. se sirva de recibir esso pequeño servicio, aunque con grande voluntad ofrecido, y poner lo debaxo de su protección y amparo, pues con esto, la obra quedará segura, y yo tambien lo estaré, de que está bien empleada: y tomaré á las para emprender mayores cosas en nombre de v. m. Cuya muy ilustre persona, nuestro señor guarde con acrecentamiento de mayores estados.

Béfa las manos de v. m. su servidór,

JOHN MINSHEU.

Diálogo primero para levantarse por la mañana y las cosas a ello pertenecientes, entre un hidalgo llamado don Pedro y su criado Alonso, y un lu amigo llamado don Iuan, y una ama.

D.P. O Yes moço?

A. Señor.

d.P. Que ora es?

A. Las cinco son dadas.

d.P. Levántate y abre aquella ventána a vér si es de día.

A. Aun no es bien amenecido.

d.P. Pues asno, como dixiste que ha dado las cinco?

A. Señor las cinco yo las conté, pero el relóx y la mañana no andan a una.

d.P. O tu mientes o el relóx miente, que el sol no puede mentir.

A. Mas vale que miento yo, que no el año.

d.P. Que día haze?

A. Señor nublado.

d.P. En los ojos déves tu de tener las nubes que el cielo yo le veo claro.

A. Pues no estóy ciego.

d.P. Antes créo que estas durmiendo toda vía.

A. Sé, que no soy elefante que tengo de dormirme en pie.

d.P. Haze frío?

A. Vn cerceganillo éntra por la ventána que corta las narizes.

d.P. Dáme de vestír que me quéro levántar.

A. A que, tan de mañana?

d.P. A negociár, que tengo mucho que hazer oy.

A. Aun no estará nadie en pie.

d.P. Tu adevinas a tu provecho.

A. Que vestido se quiere poner vuestra merced?

d.P. El de velarte, que dizen que es honray provecho.

A. Que jubón?

d.P. El de raso pespuntado.

A. He le aquí.

d.P. \* Majadéro, pues el jubon me trá-

es,

The first Dialogue of rising in the morning, and of those things thereunto appertaining: betweene a Gentleman named M. Peter, and his servant Alonso, & another friend of his called M. Iohn, and a nurse of the house.

P. Y Outh, dost thou heare?

A. Sir.

P. What is it of the clocke?

A. It hath strooken five.

P. Rise, and open that window, to see if it be day.

A. It is not yet break of the day.

P. Why then assehead, why saidst thou that it had strooke five a clocke.

A. Sir, I told you five, but the clocke and the morning goe not together.

P. Either thou liest, or the clocke lieth, for the sunne cannot lie.

A. It is better that I lie, then the yeere proove out ill.

P. What weather is it?

A. Sir cloudie weather.

P. Belike thine eies be cloudie, for I see the skie cleere.

A. Yet am I not blinde.

P. Rather I beleene thou standest sleeping.

A. I knowe, I am not elephant to sleepe standing.

P. Is it cold weather?

A. Here comes in such a colde northerly winde at the window, that it bites off my nose.

P. Giue me my clothes, for I will rise.

A. What to doe so early?

P. To goe about busines, for I haue much to doe to day.

A. No bodie will be yet stirring.

P. Thou dost prophesie for thine owne behoofe.

A. What apparell will you weare to day Sir?

P. That of the fine blacke cloth, for it is of estimation and profitable.

A. What doublet?

P. That of stitched fatten.

A. Here it is.

P. Blocke head, dost thou bring me my doublet

k 1

doublet

## Diálogos.

es, ántes que la camisa, quíeres  
me motejar de açotádo.

\* Those that be  
whipped, put on  
their doublets  
in haste before  
their shirts, to  
save them from  
another lash.

- A. Aun no ha traydo las camisas la  
labandera.
- d.P. Pues, hide puta y'd por ellas.
- A. \* Al Ruyn de Roma, quando le  
nómbbran, luego alóina, aquí  
viene ya la labandera.
- d.P. Está enxuta?
- A. Como vn cuerno.
- d.P. No os he dicho, que no me tray-  
gays estas comparaciones.
- A. \* Esto fuera, Si fuera, v.m. persona  
sospechosa que no se a de men-  
tar la foga, en casa del ahor-  
cado.
- d.P. Dame las calças de terciopelo a-  
cuchilladas.
- A. Aquí están señor.
- d.P. Están limpias? mira bien si tienen  
algun punto suelto las medias.
- A. Esta es vna de las tres cosas que  
Ganafa dezía, que el hombre  
busca con gran cuydado, y  
quando las ha hallado le peca.
- d.P. Y quales son las de mas?
- A. Vna suziedad en la cama, y los cu-  
ernos, si su muger se los pone,  
pero estas sanas estan.
- d.P. Calçamelas, dame el sayo de ve-  
larte, quel de raxa es muy del-  
gado para este frio que haze.
- A. Quiere, v.m. ponérse borzegui-  
es?
- d.P. No sino çapatos y pantuflos, por  
amor del lodo: Dame primero  
aguamános.
- A. Señor el agua está clada en el jar-  
ro.
- d.P. Buena señal. A. De que señor? d.P.  
de Carábanos.
- A. Y aun de que haze frio.
- d.P. Derrítelo en el brasero, dame en-  
tre tanto el espejo y vnastixé-  
ras que quiero adereçarme la  
barba.
- A. Aquí está el estuche donde está  
tódigo, y tambien el pcyne.
- d.P. O que de canas tengo, ya me voy  
parándo

## Dialogues.

doublet before my shirt; wilt thou  
scoffe me as though I had beene  
\* whipped?

- A. The laundresse hath not yet brought  
home the shirts.
- P. Whoorsonne knaue, gothen for them.
- A. Lupus est in fabula, as soone as one  
names him presently he appeares,  
here comes the laundresse.
- P. Is it drie?
- A. As drie as a borne.
- P. Haue I not told thee, that thou bring  
me no such comparisons.
- A. That is true, if you were a person suspec-  
ted, for a man ought not to make  
mention of a halier in the house of  
a man that was hanged.
- P. Giue me mypaned veluet hose.
- A. Here they are sir.
- P. Be they made cleane? Lookewell if the  
stockings haue any stitches bro-  
ken in them.
- A. This is one of the three things which  
Ganafa saide a man seeks dili-  
gently after, and when he hath  
found them it grieues him.
- P. And what are the other two?
- A. Filth in the bed one lieth in, and hornes  
if they be of his owne wines graf-  
ting, but these stockings are whole.
- P. Pull them on, giue me that ierkin of  
blacke cloth, for that of thin cloth  
rash is very thin for this cold wea-  
ther.
- A. Will you weare buskins?
- P. No, but pumpes and pantofles because of  
the durt: Giue me first water to  
wash my hands.
- A. Sir, the water is frozen in the pot.
- P. A good signe. A. Of what sir? P. Of  
ice.
- A. And also that it is cold.
- P. Thaw it in the pan of coales, in the  
meane while giue me the looking  
glasse and scissers, for I will trim  
my beard.
- A. Here is the case where all are in it, and  
likewise the combe.
- P. O what houre baires I haue, I begin to  
waxe



*Dialogos.*

- parándo véjo.
- A. Señor, las navidades no se van en bálde.
- d.P. Por cierto no tengo muchas, sino \* como dizen en mi tierra, cá-nas y cuernos no viénen por días.
- A. Ya está buena ésta agua, bien se puede vuestra merced lavar.
- d.P. Pues dáca la fuente, y la toalla.
- A. Quiére, v.m. Llevar capa y gorra o herreruelo y sombrero?
- d.P. No es aora tiempo de gorra, dame el herreruelo largo, y vn sombrero de fieltro.
- A. Que espáda? Dorada, plateada o Pavonada?
- d.P. No la quiero, sino enbarnizada por filo viére, Mira quien llama a la puerta.
- A. El señor don Iuan es.
- d.P. Corre abre presto.
- d.I. Muy buenos dias dé Dios. a v.m. Señor don Pedro.
- d.P. O señor don Iuan v.m. sea tan bien \* venido como los buenos años: como está v.m.?
- d.I. Muy al servicio de v.m. v.m. está bueno?
- d.P. Al servicio de v.m. como estuviére, aunque algo achacoso.
- d.I. Pues porque madruga tanto fino anda bueno?
- d.P. Porque dizen los médicos que para la salud, es bueno levantár de mañana.
- d.I. Esta salud ténganse la ellos, que para mi éstos son los dias que devénos metér en casa como dize el Refrán, o que los tengá-mos en la cama, dixéra mejor.
- d.P. Para dezír la verdad, yo mas lo hágo, por entender en mis nego-cios.
- d.I. Como le va a v.m. dellos?
- d.P. Señor al serví cio de v.m. mal ben-dito sea Dios.
- d.I. Como ansi no despáchana v.m.?
- d.P. Si Señor despéchan me. Mucácho tráe nos de almorzár antes que salgámos.

d.I. Ya

*Dialogues.*

3

waxe olde.

- A. Sir, yeeres passe not ouer ones head in vaine.
- P. Truly, I haue not many yeeves on my backe, but as they say in my countrie, Houer haire, & hornes come not by age.
- A. This water is now well, you may now wel wash Sir.
- P. Then giue heere the basen and yewer, and the towell.
- A. Will you weare a short cloake and cap, or long cloake and hat?
- P. It is no weather now for a cap, giue me a long cloake and a felt hat.
- A. What rapier, gilt, siluered, or sanguined?
- P. None, but that varnist rapier, least it should raine: Go looke who knockes at the doore.
- A. It is master Iohn.
- P. Run, open the doore quickly.
- I. God giue you good morowe master Peter.
- P. Oh master Iohn, you are as well wel-come as good fortune: how do you Sir?
- I. Readie to do you service, and are you well Sir?
- P. Howsoeuer Sir, at your command although now I am not halfe well.
- I. Why then do you rise so earely, if you be not well?
- P. Bicause Physitions saie, that for ones health it is good to rise earely in the morning.
- I. That health let them haue themselves for me, these be the good daies (as the Prouerbe saith) which wee ought to locke vp within our doores, nay (I should say) within our beds.
- P. To tell you the truth, I do it chiefly to follow my busines.
- I. How goeth it with you in your busines?
- P. Sir at your command, but ill inough God be thanked.
- I. How, do they not dispatch you?
- P. Yea Sir, they despise me. Boie, giue vs somen hat to breakefast before we go forth.

k 2

I. I

- d.I. Ya yo he bevído vna vez.  
 d.P. Beverá. v. m. ótra que no le hará mal.  
 d.I. \* No, que no soy tan delicado como judío en viernes.  
 A. Que quieren vs. ms. almorzár.  
 d.P. Tráe vnos pasteles y vn quartillo de cabrito asádo.  
 d.I. Que bien adereçado tiene. v. m. éste apofénto señor don P.  
 d.P. Señor Razonable como para vn hidálgo pobre.  
 d.I. De donde úvo. v. m. ésta tapicería?  
 d.P. Señor, de Flandes vino.  
 d.I. Tambien déven defer de alla los liénços o pintúras o Retrátos?  
 d.P. Algúnos delllos, otros son de Ytalia.  
 d.I. De gentil máno son por cierto: quanto le costó. a v. m. éste escritório?  
 d.P. Mas que vale, quarenta ducados.  
 d.I. De que madera es?  
 d.P. La colorada es caoba de la Havána y ésta negra es évano, la blanca es martíl.  
 d.I. Ciento que está muy curioso, y muy bien asentada la taraxca.  
 d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn bufete mejor labrado.  
 d.I. Adonde fue hécho?  
 d.P. El y las sillas viniéron de Salamanca.  
 d.I. Lo mejor le falta a v. m. en este aposento.  
 d.P. Que es, por vida del Señor don Iuan?  
 d.I. Por lo que dezía don Juan Manuel, un sonézito de chapín.  
 d.P. Ya entiendo, por la muger lo dize v. m.  
 d.I. Por la misma.  
 d.P. Amime parece que lo mejor que tiene es estár sin ella.  
 d.I. \* O Señor no diga. v. m. esso que es triste cosa la soledad.  
 d.P. \* A tengo me al que dize, que Vale mas solo que mal acompañado.

d.I. Pues

- I. I have already eaten a bit.  
 P. One bit more will doe you no harme.  
 I. No, for I am not so curious as the Iewe on a friday.  
 A. What will your worships breake your fast withall?  
 P. Bring a pie, and a quarter of a roasted kidde.  
 I. Oh how well in order have you this lodging M. Peter?  
 P. Sir reasonable for a poore gentleman.  
 I. From whence had you this tapestrie hangings?  
 P. Sir it came from Flanders.  
 I. And from thence also came these pictures and portraittures?  
 P. Some of them did, others came from Italia.  
 I. Truly they are of a fine workmans doing. What cost this deske or cask?  
 P. More then it is worth, fortie ducates.  
 I. Of what wood is it?  
 P. The red is \* Caoba of Havána, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Ivorie.  
 I. Truly it is very curious, and the inlaying of the wood most finely set in.  
 P. Here may you see a standing table, better wrought.  
 I. Where was it made?  
 P. That and the chaires came from Salamanca.  
 I. The best thing is yet wanting in this lodging.  
 P. What is it I praie you hartely master Iohn?  
 I. That which don Iohn Manuel saide, the gentle sound of a womans shoe.  
 P. Now I vnderstande you meane a wife?  
 I. Even the selfe same.  
 P. It seemes unto me, that the best thing my lodging hath is to be without hir.  
 I. Oh Sir, saie not so, solitarines is vnpleasant.  
 P. Ab Sir, I stande to that old saying, better alone then enill accompanied.

I. But

\* Caoba, a fine red wood in the Indies, of which they make checker worke and other curious works in cupboards, &c.

*Dialogos.*

- d.I. Pues no se entiende que a de ser mala.
- d.P. Y adónde le halláremos que sea buena?
- d.I. Muchas ay muy buenas.
- d.P. Es verdad, las que están enterradas.
- d.I. De fuerte que quiere.v.m. dezir que la mujer entonces es buena quando está muerta.
- d.P. Digo señor que cada loco con su tema, yo he dado a ora en esta.
- d.I. ✱ Y se faldrá.v.m. con ella, como el Rey con sus alcaválas.
- d.P. ✱ Se dize que una buena mula, y una buena cabra, y una buena muger son tres, malas cucas.
- Al. La mesa está puesta bien se pueden sentar.vs.ms.a almorzar.
- d.P. Señor don Juan tome.vs.ms.aquella cabeçera.
- d.I. Bueno sería, esso es per motejarme de viejo.
- d.P. No, si no por cumplir con la razón.
- d.I. V.m.tome su lugar que yo tomaré el mio.
- d.P. Bueno es que venga a mi casa, quien mande en ella mas que yo.
- d.I. O si por ay lo echa.v.m.yo obedesco en su casa y fuera.
- d.P. Yo soy el que tengo de servir como la razon me obliga. Muchacho dáca platos.
- Al. Aqui estan Señor.
- d.P. De adonde truxiste estos pastiles?
- Al. De la mas limpia pastelera que ay en la ciudad.
- d.P. Son de nuestra vezina la hermosa?
- Al. Si Señor.
- d.P. Bien los puede.v.m. comer sin asco que ne mujer limpia son.
- d.I. Mas que nunca lo fueran,nunca yo miro en miserias.
- d.P. Pues menos mirára, si fuera tan amigo de ellos como yo.
- d.I. Muy bien me saben, y lo mejor que yo les hallo es ser comida

tan

*Dialogues.*

5

- I. But you must not understande of a bad wife.
- P. And where shall we finde hir that is good?
- I. There are many very good.
- P. It is true, they which are dead and buried.
- I. So that you will say, that a woman is then good, when she is dead.
- P. I say Sir, that every foole hath his wilfulness, and I haue lighted now upon this.
- I. And you shall as easily carrie it away as the \* king doth his subsidies.
- P. It is said, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three unhappy creatures.
- A. The table is covered, your worships may well sit downe to breake fast.
- P. M. Iohn, sit you downe at the upper end of the table.
- I. It should doe well in deede, that is a floute because I am olde.
- P. Not so, but to doe you right.
- I. Take you your place and I will take mine.
- P. It is very good, that I should haue such a guest as should command more in my house then my selfe.
- I. Ob Sir if you take it so, I not onely obey you in your house, but abroad also.
- P. Sir I am to be at your seruice, as reason bindeth mee. Here giue mee dishes heere.
- A. Heere they are Sir.
- P. From whence didst thou fetch these pies?
- A. From the cleanliest piewife, that is in the citie.
- P. What from our faire neighbour?
- A. Yea Sir.
- P. Well may you eate Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a cleanly woman.
- I. And if they were not, I neuer sticke for small matters.
- P. Lesse would you stande vpon it, if you did loue them as I doe.
- I. They please my taste well, and the best is that I alwaies finde them to bee a

\* Without controuersie.

tan acorrida, que a qualquier,  
ora, que el hombre la quiera la  
halla guisada.

d.P. Muchácho da nos de bever que pí-  
ca la pimienta.

\*Tinto is a  
wine in Spaine  
red & blackish.

Al. Que quiere, v.m. blanco o tinto?

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas cali-  
ente para por la mañana.

d.I. Y aun es mas saludable que lo tinto.

d.P. Brindo a v.m. Señor don Juán.

d.I. Beso, a v.m. las manos, haré la ra-  
zón.

Al. Por qual taça quiere, v.m. bever,  
por la Llana o por esta hon-  
dilla.

d.I. Alonso amigo, avéis de saber que  
yo soy muy buen borrácho y  
sé muy bien lo que me bevo,  
por esso echaldme por aquella  
taça llana.

d.P. Yo gusto mas de bever por esta co-  
pa de vidrio que no por ningun-  
a de las taças.

d.I. \* Señor, contra gustos no ay dif-  
puta.

d.P. Ansies verdád, con esta pierna de  
cabrito beberá, v.m. otra vez,  
y trae vnas aceitunas para la  
terçera.

d.I. Esta ya se llamará comida y no al-  
muérzo.

d.P. Porque?

d.I. Porque dizen a buen coméro mal  
comér, tres vézes se a de bever.

d.P. Ay dize nuestra madre çelettina  
\* que está corrupta la letra  
que por dezír treze díxo tres.

d.I. Aora señor bien está lo hecho, no  
mas que perderémos la gana  
de el comer.

d.P. den nos a bever otras sendas de la  
calabriáda.

\* Calabriáda:  
a mixed wine,  
halfe one wine  
and halfe ano-  
ther.

d.I. Adonde yrémos?

d.P. Lo primero a la yglésia, y enco-  
mendár nos a Dios.

d.I. \* Está muy bien, que por yr a la  
yglésia ni dar çevada, no se  
pierde jornada.

d.P. çierra

meate so in readines, that at what  
soeuer hower a man will haue it he  
may finde it ready drest.

P. Boy giue vs drinke, for the pepper bites.

A. Which will you haue sir, sacke or \* tin-  
to?

P. Fill out of the sacke, for it is more hea-  
ting, chiefly for the morning.

I. And also is more wholesome then the  
red.

P. I drinke to you master Iohn.

I. I thanke you sir, I will pledge you.

A. In which cup will your worship drinke, in  
the plaine bowle, or in the little  
deepe one.

I. Friend Alonso you must knowe, that I  
am a very good drinker, and know  
how much I use to drinke, where-  
fore fill me that plaine bowle.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drin-  
king glasse then out of any other of  
the cups.

I. Sir, against ones liking there is no dis-  
puting.

P. It is so Sir: this leg of kid will make  
you once againe haue a quarrell to  
the cup. Bring vs some olives for  
the third course.

I. This is to be called a dinner and not a  
breakefast.

P. Why?

I. Because to a good meale or a bad,  
three draughts onely are to be had.

P. Alas saith our mother Celestine, the  
letter is corrupted, for whereas he  
should haue said thirteene, he set  
downe three.

I. Well Sir, it sufficeth, we haue eaten well,  
no more, for we shall loose our sto-  
macks to eate at dinner.

P. Let them giue to each of vs once againe  
of the \* Calabriáda.

I. Whither shall we goe?

P. First to the Church, to commend our  
selues to God.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to  
the Church, nor in giuing prouen-  
der to thy horse, was there euer  
iourney hindered or lost.

P. Shut



*Dialogos.*

d.P. ¿Cierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro  
estas baratijas, llama al áma  
que barra y componga este a-  
posento.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v.mr

d.P. No, fino quédate en casa, ayúda al  
áma y limpia todos mis vesti-  
dos y ponédla en órden y a las  
once llevame el cavallo a pa-  
lacio.

Al. Está muy bien Señor, yo lo haré  
anti.

d.P. \* Éste mi criado Señor don Juan, es  
como malilla que hago de ello  
que quiero.

d.I. Ya anda. v. m. en lo cierto para  
ser bien servido, que quando  
hombre tiene muchos criados,  
unos por otros nunca házen  
côsa a deréchas.

d.P. El me sirve de mayordómo, de re-  
postero, de maestre sala, de  
guarda ropa, de paje, y de la-  
cayo, y a vezes de despenéro.

d.I. El parece buen hijo.

d.P. Bueno señor es tan bueno que a ser  
mas, no valiera nada, sola vna  
falta tiene.

d.I. Quales?

d.P. \* Que es grandísimo enemigo de  
el agua.

d.I. Ésto hará lo, por el bien que le sabe  
el vino, pero ésa no se puede  
llamar falta, si no sobra.

d.P. Muchácho cierra la puerta, con la  
\* llave, que a puerta cerrada el  
Diablo se buelva.

Al. Ama, tráyga vn caldéro de agua y  
vna escoba, regarémos y barra-  
remos éste aposento.

Ama. Toma primero esta ropa blanca  
que traxo la labandera.

Al. Aguarde, facaré la memoria para  
ver si falta algo.

Am. Adonde la tienes?

Al. Aquí está en mi faltriquera.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memoria de la ropa de mi ámo  
que llevó la lavandera en diez  
de março de 1599. primera-  
mente quatro camisas con sus  
cuellos

*Dialogues.*

7

P. *Shut that chest, put up safe this house-  
hold stuffe, call the nurse that shee  
sweepe and dresse this lodging.*

A. *Shall I waite on your sir?*

P. *No, but tarry in the house, helpe the  
nurse and brush all my apparel and  
set the house in order, and at ele-  
ven of the clocke bring my horse to  
the court.*

A. *Verie well sir, I will doe it.*

P. *This my servant master Iohn is as the  
\* Malilla, for I make of him what  
I will.*

I. *And thereby you are sure to be well  
served, for when a man hath many  
servants, one by reason of the other  
never doe that they ought.*

P. *He serveth me for steward of my house,  
for a keeper of my plate, for a gen-  
man-usher, wardrop keeper, page,  
and for lacquey, and sometimes for  
cater.*

I. *He seemes to be an honest fellow, a good  
fellow or good servant.*

P. *Good Sir, so good he is, that if he were  
better, he were worth nothing, on-  
ly one fault he hath.*

I. *What is that?*

P. *That he lones no water by no means.*

I. *That is for the good he findes in wine,  
but this cannot be called a want in  
him, but a superfluitie.*

P. *Boy, locke the doore with the key, for at  
a locked doore, the diuell himselfe  
goeth his way.*

A. *Nurse, bring a kettle of water and a  
broome, we will cast water on, and  
sweepe this chamber.*

N. *Take first this cleane linnen which the  
laundresse brought home.*

A. *Stay a little, I will take out the note to  
see if any thing be wanting.*

N. *Where is it?*

A. *Heere it is in my pocket.*

N. *Reade it then.*

A. *A note of my masters clothes which  
the laundresse had the tenth of  
March, 1599. First fower  
shirts, with their russe bands*

cuellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aqui están A. dos sábanas, dos almohadas de cama, dos pares de calzones de lienzo, tres de calcetas.

A. Aqui están.

Al. Vna dozena de pares de escarpines.

Am. No ay aquí mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro faltan a la labandera pedirle he que de quenta dellos, y si ella los perdió que los pague.

Am. Anda, que valen quatro escarpines viejos y rotos?

Al. Yten mas dos escochetas y quatro tocadores, media dozena de pañucelos de narizes.

Am. Aqui está todo.

Al. Dos mesas de mantiles, y diez servillitas.

Am. Aqui están.

Al. Trestoallas, y vn frutero, y dos cuellos de encáje con sus puños.

Am. Todo está aqui que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblemoslo, y pongámoslo en el arca.

Am. Como me Llamáys para que os ayúde a esto, no me Llamárades para que os ayudára al almuerzo.

Al. Allí tengo guardados vnos escamóchos que sobráran a mi amo.

Am. Quiero primero barrer ésta sala y adereçarla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, save de la escobilla?

Am. Vella allí colgada de aquel clávo, que si fuera perro ya te uviéra mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene esta capa?

Am. Sacude la primero con vna vára.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos están estos calzones?

Am. Tambien entiendo yo de esto, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiende?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa si tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of sheetes, twopillowes, two paire of linnen breeches next the skin, three paire of linnen hose under the stockings:

N. Heere they are.

A. A dosen paire of sockes.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then fower wants, I will require of the laundresse that she give account of them, and if she hath lost them that she paie for them.

N. Go, what are fower old broken sockes woorth?

A. Also more, two night coises and fower night kerchiefs, halfe a dosen of handkerchiefs.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

A. Three towels, and one \* fruite cloth and two russe bandes wrought with their russes at hand.

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let vs fold it, and let vs put it in the chest.

N. Wherefore call you me, that I should helpe you to do this, & would not cal me that I should helpe you to eate your breakfast?

A. There haue I saved certaine fragments which my Master left.

N. I will first sweepe this hall and dresse it.

A. In the meane while will I bruse the clothes: doe you knowe where the bruse is?

N. See there hanged vpon that naile, that if it were a beare it would now haue bit thee.

A. Oh what a deale of dust hath this cloke?

N. Beate it out first with a wand.

A. Nurse, how exceeding well are these breeches made.

N. I haue as good knowledge therein as a sowe in a bridle.

A. What haue you knowledge in then?

N. In that which belongeth vnto me, if thou

\* Fruite cloth to cover the fruite when it is carried to the table.

Dialogos.

preguntáras por una basquiña, una saya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuerpo, una gorguera, de una toca, y cosas semejantes, supiera te yo responder.

Al. De manera que no sabe leer, mas de por el libro de su aldea.

Am. Quieres tu, que sea yo, como el ymbidioso, que su cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viene.

Al. Siempre es virtud, saber, aunque sean cosas que parecen que no nos importan.

Am. Bien te yo, que tu sabrás hacer una bellaquería, y ésta no es virtud.

Al. El saberla hacer no es malo, el usarla sí.

Am. \* Siempre oy decir que quien las sabe las tiene.

Al. \* No sino que quien ha las hechas ha las sospechas.

Am. Pues véllalo que he hecho yo?

Al. No mas de hacerme regañar algunas veces.

Ama. Nome destu ocasión.

Al. Estonces muchas mercedes, quando le doy ocasión, es menester que me perdón, que quando no se la doy, poca amistad me haze.

Ama. Aora hermano dexate de retóricas y has lo que tu amo te mandó.

Al. Si haré aun que bien créo que no por ésto me tengo de alentar con el ala mía.

Ama. A lo menos escusarás de que el no te asiente en el rabo.

Al. Yo voy a enfiñar el caballo, a dios paredes hasta la buelta.

Dialogues.

9

*thou hadst asked of a peticoate, a womans cassocke, a womans gowne a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gorget, or a womans head attire, and like matters, I could haue answered thee.*

A. *So then the priest cannot say masse but in his owne booke.*

N. *Wilt thou, that I should be as the envious person which setteth his minde on that which belongs not vnto him.*

A. *Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, although they be things which seem not to appertaine vnto vs.*

N. *I know well, that thou knowest well how to play the knave, and that I am sure is no vertue.*

A. *To know how to doe it is not euill, but to vse it it is euill.*

N. *I alwaies haue heard say, he that can play, plaiceth.*

A. *No but whosoever is bad, hath suspition of another to be bad.*

N. *Why knaue what haue I done?*

A. *Nothing else, but make me fret and vex me my selfe sometimes.*

N. *Do not thou giue me occasion?*

A. *Then I thanke you hartily, when I giue you occasion it is necessarie that you pardon me, that when I giue you no occasion, you doe mee little*

*\* Meaning then*

N. *Now brother, leaue your rhetoricke, and doe that thy M. commanded thee.*

A. *So will I doe, although I beleene, for all that I am not to sit at table with him.*

N. *Thou must needs beare with that, for that he doth not see it on your hum.*

A. *I goe to saddle the horse, farewell waits till my returne.*

*she doth not forgive him any thing, seeing he maketh no offence vnto her.*

**D**ialógo segúndo, en el qual, se trata de comprar y vender joyas y otras cosas entre un Hidálgo llamado Thomas, y su muger Margarita, y un Mercader y un Platero.

**Th.** **A** Donde queréis que vamos Señora?

**Ma.** Vámos a la platería, y compraremos algunas pieças de plata.

**Th.** Y de allí?

**Ma.** Yrémos a la lonja para comprar algunas cosas.

**Th.** En el nombre de Dios, entrémos en ésta tienda.

**Ma.** Plegue a el, sea con pie derecho.

**Th.** A Señor guarde Dios a v.m.

**Pl.** Y venga con vuestras merçedes.

**Th.** Mande nos mostrar, algunas buenas pieças.

**Pl.** Que géneros quiere v.m. tácas, copas o jarros, fuentes, platos, y escudillas, es lo mas necesario.

**Th.** Y tambien copas de salvo, y saleros, vinagéras.

**Pl.** Olamóço, saca aqui toda essa plata de el arca.

**Ma.** Veamos aquellos candeléros y depaviladéras.

**Th.** Si estos brazerillos de méfa estuviéran sin celados fueran mejores.

**Pl.** Otros dizen, que la sin celadura es allegadero de mierda, hablando con perdón de vuestras merçedes.

**Ma.** No veo aquí agua manil ninguno.

**Pl.** Aqui está vno sobre dorado y sin celado con su fuente de la misma labor.

**Th.** Yo quisiera toda la baxilla de una misma labor que no diferenciáran vnas pieças de otras.

**Pl.** Por esso dizen, que tantas opiniones ay como cabeças: otros dizen que la variedad es la que agrada.

**Th.** Es verdad, pero la variedad ha de fer de cosas enteras, y por que hazer vna capa de remiendos, no puede agradar a nadie.

**Pl.** Conçierte

The second Dialogue, wherein is handled to buye and sell iewels and other things, betweene a gentleman called Thomas and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a goldsmith.

**Th.** **W** Hither will you that wee goe Ladie?

**Ma.** Let vs go to the goldsmithes shops, and we will buye some peeces of plate.

**Th.** And from thence whither?

**Ma.** We will go to the Exchange to buy some things.

**Th.** In the name of God let vs go into this shop.

**Ma.** I praise God it be in good time, luckily.

**Th.** Oh master goldsmith, God save you.

**Go.** And God be in your companie.

**Th.** Cause one to shew vs some good peeces.

**Go.** What kinds will your worships see, plain cups, deep cups, or pots, ewers, plateters, or dishes, all these are the most necessarie.

**Th.** And also cups with coners, and salt-sellers, and bottles for vinegar and oyle.

**Go.** Ho sirra, take out beere all this plate out of this chest.

**Ma.** Let vs see these candlestickes and snuffers.

**T.** If those chafin dishes for the table were engrauen they were better.

**G.** Others say, that the graving is a gathering of filth, speaking with reverence of your worships.

**M.** I see no basen here.

**G.** Here is one gilt ouer, and graued with his ewer of the same worke.

**T.** I would haue all a cupboord of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

**G.** Therefore they say, so many men so many mindes, others say varietie breedeth delight.

**T.** It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entire things by themselves, for to make a cloake with patches can please no bodie.

**Go.** Agree



*Diálogos.*

Pl. Conçierte se v.m. conmigo en el  
preçio, que yo se la daré acabá-  
da dentro de pocas días de la  
hechura que la quisiere.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peli-  
gro, y vale mas páxaro en mano  
que bueytte bolándo.

Th. Pues escoja de ay v.m. les pieças  
que mas le agradáren.

Ma. Este salpimentero y ésta copa con  
su sobre copa, y éste pichel, y  
ésta caldereta, y ésta porcelana  
sean las priméras.

Th. A como hémos de dár por \* el mar-  
co de estas pieças?

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de  
dár. v.m. a çien reáles por las  
sinçeládas, a quinze ducádos y  
por las doradas a treynta du-  
cados.

Th. Si el pedír fuera dár, no se avía he-  
cho mala hazienda oy, però de  
\* el dieho a el hécho ay gran  
trecho.

Pl. Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo,  
que v.m. me ha o freçido hasta  
agora.

Th. Está tan caro, que yo no sé que le o-  
frezca si no es vna \* baxa.

Pl. Esta yo la dançaré despues que v.  
m. aya tañido su álta.

Th. Mimas alta Señor, es a seis duca-  
dos la llána, y a çien reales, la  
sinçeláda, y la doráda, a veinte  
ducádos.

Pl. Muy bien despachádo y va yo, mas  
me tiénen ami de cósta.

Th. Pues Señor torne a dançar a vér en  
que pára.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a v.m.  
dos ducádos y no mas.

Th. Muy mal dançó. v.m. no le tóco  
mas.

Pl. Pues yo le asegúro a v.m. que no lo  
halle mas varáto en la calle.

Th. Calle que si hallare, que donde vna  
\* puerta se cierra ciento se á-  
bren.

Ma. Si ha de valer mi voto, dezir le he.  
Pl. Diga

*Dialogues.*

11

Go. *Agree with me for the price, and I wil  
make it vp for you within these  
few daies, of what fashion you will  
haue it.*

M. *Alwaies delaies breede danger, and  
better a birde in hand then a vul-  
ture flying.*

T. *Then choose you out those peeces which  
best shall like you.*

M. *This salt and pepper boxe, and this cup  
with his cower, and this pot made  
ewer wise, and this kettle of siluer,  
and this broad cup to drinke in are  
the best.*

Tb. *What are we to paie for the halfe pound  
of these peeces?* \* Marco de pla-  
to is worth

Go. *For the halfe pounce of these plaine  
peeces your worship is to giue mee  
fiftie shillings, for the engraving  
fifteene ducates, and for the gilt  
thirtie ducates.* xxxij. s. Eng-  
lish beside the  
fashion.

Tb. *If asking were giuing you had not made  
an ill match to day, but there is a  
great distance betwixt the worde  
and the deede.*

Go. *At least I will not giue it for that you  
haue offered me as yet.*

Tb. *You are so deere that I know not what  
I may offer for it, if there bee no  
abatement.* \* A daunce so  
called. Also an  
abatement.

Go. *That will I daunce after your worship  
hath strooke the treble.*

Tb. *My highest is sixe ducates the plaine,  
and fiftie shillings the engrauen,  
and the gilt twentie ducates.*

Go. *This busines is wel dispatched now, they  
cost me more.*

Tb. *But sir, come backe and daunce againe,  
to see vpon what you sticke.*

Go. *In every kinde of them I will abate two  
ducates and no more.*

Tb. *You daunce very ill, I plaie no more.*

Go. *But I assure your worship that you can-  
not finde better cheape in the  
streets.*

Tb. *Holde your peace, for I will finde: for  
where one dore shuts a hundred  
do open.*

Ma. *If my voice may preuaile, ile strike the  
stroke.* Go. *Let*

Pl. Diga le v.m. que le soy muy devoto.

Go. Let your worship speake on, for I am much deuoted.

Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el platéro, suba el señor Tomás y no se hable mas.

Ma. Then so much as the goldsmith hath abated, so much let master Thomas rise, and let there be no more wordes.

Pl. Porque su palabra de v.m. no buelva atras, &c.

Go. For that your worships worde may bee taken, &c.

Th. No quería v.m. mas, ora peselo, pesár malo le dé dios a el diablo.

Th. You can desire no more, now waigh it, God giue ill waigh to the diuill.

Pl. Lleven lo a casa que allá lo pesaremos.

Go. Carrie it to your house, there we will waigh it.

Th. Móço carga con todo y Lleva lo a casa.

Th. Sirra, take up all this and carrie it home.

Pl. Han de bolvér se luego vuestras mercedes?

Go. Are your worships to come backe againe this way by and by?

Th. No hasta de aquí a dos oras, que ymos a comprar otras cosas.

Th. Not till within this two howers, for we goe to buy other things.

Pl. Si v.m. es servido de que le acompañe, hazér lo he.

Go. If it please you, that I go with you, I will.

Ma. Guarde Dios a v.m. que no querémos mas compañía.

Ma. God keepe you, we will no more companie.

Th. En ninguna cosa gasto el dinero, de mejor gana que en plata.

Th. In nothing I spend money with a better will then in plate.

Ma. Lo que se gasta en plata no es gastar, si no trocar pieças chicas por pieças grandes.

Ma. That which is laide out in plate is not wasted, but to change small peeces for great peeces.

Th. Y tambien por que cabe en ella lo que dizen que no cabe en un saco que es honra y provecho.

Th. And also there is containned in it that they say is not contained in a sacke, which is \*honor and profit.

\* Honor and profit is not held together in one bagge.

Ma. Si, por que si hombre le quiere servir con vidrio o china, o barro, mas cuesta lo que se quiebra entre año que la hechura de la plata.

Ma. Yea, for if a man will serue his turne with glasse, or \*China mettall, or earth, that which is broken thereof, costs more in a yeere then the fashion of the plate.

\* i. the fine dishes of earth painted such as are brought from Venice.

Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre compra vna vez, tiene para hijos, nietos, y visnietos.

Th. And for a cupboord that a man buieth once, he is furnished for his children, nephewes, and nephewes children.

Ma. Ahora vámos a la joyería.

Ma. Now let vs goe to the place where they sell iewels.

Th. Esse es vn camino que yo hago de muy mala gana.

Th. This is a way that I goe unwillingly.

Ma. Por que razón?

Ma. What is the reason?

Th. Por que éstas joyas son como las donzellas, que mientras están ençerradas son de mucho valor, y en sacando las fuera, le pierden todo y no valen nada.

Th. Because these iewels are as maidens, that while they are maidens and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they loose all, and are worth nothing.

Ma. Si però, lo que se vía no se escusa.

Ma. Yea, but that which is a custome cannot be shunned, custome needes no excuse.

Th. Al

Th. But

Th. Al mal vfo quebrár le la pierna.

Th. But it is good to breake the legs of an ill custome.

Ma. No queráis señór poner vos puertas a el campo ni corregir el mundo, que ansi le halláites y ansi le havéis de dexár.

Ma. I would not haue you Sir\* make doores for the fields, and correct the whole world: for so you found it, and so shall you leaue it. \* i. to do things impossible.

Th. Ora pues corra ol rio por do fuele, pues se arendo la renta con éstas condiciones.

Th. Why then let the river run where it was wont, seeing the thing was hired with these conditions.

Ma. Entrémos en esta tiénda que es la mas rica.

Ma. Let vs goe into this shop, for it is the richest.

Me. Que manda v. m. señór caualléro, que ha menester?

Me. What doth your worship command, what haue you needs of?

Th. Yo ninguna cosa, ésta señóra, muchas.

Th. I of nothing, this gentlewoman of many things.

Me. Pues pida su merçéd, que todo se le dará aquí a muy buen prégio.

Me. Then let her require what, and all shall be giuen her very good cheape.

Ma. Muestre me acá algunos tocados, guirnaldivas, rapósos, randas, deshilados, tocas de todas fuertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras fuertes de liénços.

Ma. Shew me some womens head attire, garland head attire, wires of silver, bone worke or bone lace, stitched worke, head attire of all sorts, and also bring fine holland, cambreeke, and other sorts of linnen.

Me. Entre v. m. que todo lo verá aquí.

Me. May it please your worship come in, for you shall see all heere.

Ma. Todo esto es obra toscá mas prima la quiero.

Ma. All this is grosse worke, I would see \* Prima i. chief, principall or a shee cosen german.

Th. Para prima Señora no es buena la hija de vuestro tío?

Th. Will not your uncles daughter serue you for a cosen?

Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por esso queria otra mas delgada.

Ma. This is very course, and therefore would I haue other finer.

Me. Pues en esta caxa verá. v. m. el primór del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.

Me. Then in this chest shall your worship see the principallest that is, all is worke of Milan.

Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas.

Th. Worke of Milan\* see me but touch \* Because they are toies, if you touch them they breake in peeces.

Ma. Nada de esto me contémta.

Ma. None of these pleaseth me.

Me. Espanto me como se caló v. m. siendo tan mal contentadiza.

Me. I wonder how your worship married being so diuers to please your fancy.

Th. Fue por que vido a el nóbio de noche, y como dizen entonçes todos los gatos son párdos.

Th. It was because she saw the bridegroome by night, and as they saie, when all cats are greyed.

Ma. Muestre me otra mejor obra si tiene, y dexese de preguntár quantos años tengo.

Ma. Shewe me some better worke, if you haue any, and leaue of to aske how old I am.

Me. Aora ésta es la última pruéva, ve aquí v. m. obra de argentería ve allí de aljófar, éstóra de abalório, y ésta de pérlas, escoja como peras en tabaque.

Me. Now is the last triall, see heere worke of silver, there of small pearle, this orber of blacke bugles, and this of pearle, choose out as peares in a basket.

Ma. Por cierto en ruin háto, poco ay que escojer.

Ma. Verily in a bad flocke, this is but a smal choise,

Me. A

l 3

Me. Call



Me. A esto llama v. m. ruin, réo que es de peór condición que el filósofo Demócrito, que no halló cosa en el mundo que no tubiéssse falta.

Th. Eßlo sin Demócrito lo digo yo, que no ay cosa perfecta en el mundo.

Me. Eßlo verificárse ha, en cosas naturales, que en las de el arte puede aver perfección cada vna en su género.

Th. Pues que pensáis vos que es el arte, sino ymitadór de la natura, y si en la natura no ay perfección menos la avrá en el arte su imitadór.

Me. Yo señor no soy filósofo, ni quieró contendér con v. m. mis mercaderías querria que tubiéssen su perfección en el preço.

Ma. Sino le tienen en su valor, no le pueden tener en el preço.

Me. Aora señora véa v. m. lo que mas le contémta, y tome lo que no tengo otra cosa mejor.

Ma. Este tocádo, este cuélllo, ésta gargantilla de perlas, este regalillo, y este avanillo, ésta dos pares de guantes de flores, y ésta pretina, me parécen bien, todo lo de mas no.

Th. Quanto monta todo eßlo?

Me. Todo monta tres çientos reales.

Th. Tres çientos años esté de vn lado quien tal diere.

Me. Pues por que no le alcançe a v. m. ésta maldición dos çientos, y ochenta.

Th. No entiendo bien ésta cuenta.

Me. \* Dos vézes ciento y quarenta.

Ma. Buena está la copla, no han de sér mas que dos çientos y cinquenta en todo.

Me. Con v. m. el perdér es ganár, pues manda que se a anfi, yo no hablaré mas palabra.

Th. Para que quiere hablar mas, si con las habladas ha hecho su agósto.

Me. Por çierto señor de este agósto, po-  
ca

Me. Call you this bad, I beleene that you are of a worse condition then the Philosopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.

Th. I say this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.

Me. This is to be verified in natural things, for in those things of arte, there may be perfection, every thing in his kinde.

Th. Why what thinke you that arte is anie thing else but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much lesse shall there be anie in arte hir follower.

Me. Sir I am not a Philosopher, neither will I contende with your worship, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.

Ma. If they haue it not in their worth, they cannot haue it in their price.

Me. Nowe ladie, see that which best likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.

Ma. This kerchiefe, this bande, this neckelace of pearle, this muffle, and \* this fanne, these two paire of gloves perfumed, and this girle likes me, all the rest I care not for.

Th. How much comes all this to?

Me. All comes to \* three hundred rials, or sixe pences.

Th. Let him lie three hundred yeeres on one side that should giue so much.

Me. Then because this curse may not light vpon you, giue two hundred and fower score.

Th. I vnderstand not well this reckoning.

Me. Twise a hundred, and twise fortie.

Ma. This copla is well, it should be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.

Me. With your worship to lose is gaine, seeing you commaund so, I will not speake a word more.

Th. Why would you speake any more, if with that which is spoken you haue made your harness.

Me. Truly sir, of this harness I haue gotten

\* But not of feathers, for they vse no feather fans in Spaine.

\* i. Seauen pound ten shillings.

\* Dos vezes, se refiere a ciento y tambien al quarenta.



Diálogos.

Dialogues.

15

ca cosecha he cogido.  
Th. Señor si hiziera buena sementera cogiera mas.

Me. Aun tengo aquí otras muchas mercaderías muy curiosas que v.m. no ha visto.

Ma. Que son?

Me. Sartillas, joyeles, cintas de resplandor, brocadetes, rodetes conas de oro, arandelas, alcacuellos, gorgueras de red, camisas labradas, gargantillas de perlas, y ambar, todo género de aceite y de perfumes, véa v.m. si le contenta algo.

Ma. Otro día vernemos mas de espacio para ver todo esto.

Th. Pareçeme señor que es vuestro oficio, como el de los torneros engaña muchachos y faga dineros.

Me. Pues es mi señora Margarita muchacho?

Th. Basta que sea engañada.

Me. A fee que no ha de tãver poco quien la ha de engañar.

Th. Engañarse ha ella mesma a si misma.

Me. Como?

Sh. Dando dineros por estas bugerías que reluzen y no es oro todo, y quando váya a casa, se hallará con no nada entre dos platos.

Me. Para que es el dinero si no para luzirle con ello.

Th. Se que esto aunque reluze no lize.

Ma. Ya os he dicho señor, que os vais al coriente de la de mas gente, y pues os casastes como los otros passa por donde los otros, no andeis por los estremos que todo hombre estremado no está vn dedo de loco, estas son cargas de el casamiento.

Th. La ayuda de el escaravájo que dexa la carga quanto le ayudan.

Ma. Aora

zen but a little fruit.

Th. If you had made your seede time better, you had reaped more.

Me. Yet haue I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worship hath not seene yet.

Ma. What are they?

Me. Chaines of teat amber, or such like, tabletiewels, girilles faire to see to, cloth of gold the wooser sort, head rolles, coifes of gold, supporters, gorgets of networke, wrought shirts or smockes, necke laces of pearles and amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, see if you like any.

Ma. We will come another day, more at leasure to see all this.

Th. It seemes to me sir, that your trade is as that of the turners, which de-

\* Make tops for children.

Me. Why is my Lady Margaret a boy?

Th. It sufficeth that she be deceived.

Me. In faith, he is not to know a little that must deceive her.

Th. She her selfe will deceive her selfe.

Me. How?

Th. In giuing money for these childsh toies, which shine and yet are not all gold, and when she goes home, it will be founde nothing betweene two platters.

Me. Why is money made, but to make shew therewith?

Th. I knowe that this, although it glitter double, it shines not.

Ma. I haue already told you sir, that you goe the common course of the most, & seeing you haue married as other men haue, passe that way as other men doe go not by extremities. for

\* The nature of the beetle in the con-turd when another comes to help him, leaues all: so in marriage, when another comes to helpe to maintaine his wife, he forsakes her.

Th. The helpe of marriage like the helpe of the beetle under the con-turd, which forsakes the burden as soone as they helpe him.

l 2

Ma. Sir,

Ma. Aora señór éssas son pendências que se han de reñir en casa vámonos.

Th. Vámos señóra, toma vueſtro dinero Señór mercader.

Me. Yo quedo muy conténto y beſo a v.m. las manos y vea ſi me manda ótra coſa.

Th. Que con ſalúd que tengamos, nunca mas nos veámos.

Me. Por cierto Señór, yo no ſoy tan yngráto, que cada dia quería vér a v.m. por mi caſa.

Th. Yo créo que queríades vér mi bólfamas no a mi.

Me. No ſoy tan codicióſo como a v.m. le parézco.

Th. No digo yo que lo ſoy, pero apoſtaré que queréis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.

Me. Por adivino le podrían a v.m. caſtigár.

Th. Lo que con los ojos véo con el dédo lo adivino.

Ma. A Dios mercader.

Me. Beſo a v.m. las manos mi Señóra.

Ma. Vámos a ora a la lonja a comprár ſédas.

Th. Que queréis comprár Señóra?

Ma. Que terciopélo, raſo, damáſco, taſetán, riço, gorgarán, chamelóte, laníllas para veſtíros a vos y ami.

Th. Para eſſo es meneſter otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comer que mañána yrénos a comprár eſſo.

Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quiſiera que quedára oy todo hecho, que no tener que ſalír mañana otra buelta.

Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis de paſſeár un rato, para que me queréis hazér entender de el çielo cebólla?

Ma. No ſeáis maliçioſo que no medraráis.

Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéro que venga a peſár la plata y por ſu dinéro.

Ma. Sir, theſe are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let vs goe.

Th. Let vs goe, take your money Maſter Merchant.

Me. I am very well content, and kiſſe your hands, and ſee if you command any thing els.

Th. Some may have health that we neuer ſee one an other more.

Me. Truly ſir I am not ſo ingratefull, but that enerie day I would ſee your worſhip by my houſe.

Th. I beleene you would ſee my purſe rather then me.

Me. I am not ſo cometous as I ſeeme unto you.

Th. I ſay not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather have two ſhillings than one.

Me. They might well puniſh you for a ſoothſayer.

Th. That which with the eies I ſee, I conſecture with my finger.

Ma. God be with you merchant.

Me. Ladie I kiſſe your hands.

Ma. Let vs goe now to the exchange to buy ſilkes.

Th. What would you buy?

Ma. What, plaine veluet, damaſke, taſata, vncut veluet, gogram, chamlet, ſarge, to cloath you and my ſelfe.

Th. For all this another day will ſerue, it is late now let vs goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.

Ma. Let vs goe then, although I would rather that al were done to day, then to come forth another turne to morrow.

Th. Goe, for you take good pleaſure to walke a while, wherfore you would make me beleene the moone is made of a greene cheeſe?

Ma. Be not malitious, for you ſhall ſhrine neuer the ſooner.

Th. Boy, run cal the goldſmith, that he come to waigh the plate and fetch his money:

Diálogo tercero, de un combite, entre  
cinco cavalleros amigos, llamados, Guz-  
man, Rodrigo, don Lorénço, Mendoza, y  
Osorio, un maestro sala, y un paje, en el  
qual, se trata, de cosas pertene-  
cientes a un combite con  
otras pláticas, y di-  
chos agudos.

*The thirde Dialogue of a banquet be-  
tweene five gentlemen friends, called  
Gusman, Rodricke, sir Lorenço, Mendoza,  
Osorio, a gentleman vscher, and a Page,  
in which are handled things belon-  
ging to a banquet with other  
speeches and wittie  
sayings.*

G. O La, está ay algun paje?  
P. Señor.  
G. Sáues a cáfa de don Rodrigo?

G. H Oe, is there any Page there?  
P. Sir.  
G. Dost thou knowe master Rodrick his  
house?

P. Si Señor.  
G. Pues véé allá, dile que le befo las  
mános, y que si le paréce óra de  
que nos veámos.

P. Yea sir.  
G. Then go thither and tell him that I com-  
mend me to him, and if he thinke  
good now, that we may meete to-  
gether.

P. Aquí está un criado de el Señor don  
Lorénço.

P. Heere is a servant of sir Lorenço.

G. Entre.  
Cr. Don Lorénço mi Señor, befa a v.m.  
las inános y embía a saber si está  
en cáfa, por que tiene un negó-  
cio que tratar con v.m.

G. Let him come in.  
S. Sir Lorenço my master commends him  
unto your worship, and sendes me to  
know whether you be at home, for  
hee hath a busines to entreate of  
with you.

G. Que befo a su merçed las manos, y  
que yo fuera a la Suya, a besárle  
las si no tuviéra una ocupación  
forçosa que esperar, la qual  
tambien toca a su merçed que si  
viniére, será el bien venido y se  
tratará de todo.

G. I thanke him, and I woulde haue come  
unto his house to haue saluted  
him, if I had not tarried beere  
about a busines of importance, the  
which also concernes him, if hee  
come he shall be welcome, and wee  
will talke at large.

Cr. Befo a v.m. las manos.  
G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezíd a el ma-  
estre sala que hága poner éssas  
mésas, que vernán ya los con-  
vidados.

S. I take my leaue of your worship.  
G. God be with you. Ho tel the gentleman-  
vscher that he make the tables to  
be couered, for the guests wil come  
by and by.

M. Señor v.m. como se quiere servir oy,  
ala Ytaliana, o ala Françeza, o  
a la Ynglesa, o a la Flaménca, o  
a la Todésca?

V. Sir will your worship haue your seruice  
today, after the Italian, after the  
French, after the English, after  
the Flemish, or after the Dutch  
manner?

G. De todos éssos estrémos me sacád  
vn médio, no quiero tantas ce-  
rimónias, como el Ytaliano, ni  
quiero tanta curiosidad, como  
el Françés, ni quiero tanta a-  
bundancia, como el Ynglés, ni  
quiero que la comida sea tan  
larga, como el Flaménco ni tan  
unida

G. Of all these extremes take me out one  
meane, I will not haue so many ce-  
remonies as the Italian, neither  
will I so much curiositie as the  
French, neither such abundan-  
dance as the English, neither will  
I that the meale be so long as the  
Flemmings, nor so moist as the

úmida como el tudésco, mas de todos estos estremos, compóneme vn médio a la Española.

M. Anfi se hará como v.m.lo manda.

G. Vuestro mayor cuidado sea que la comida sea caliente y la bebida fría.

\* In Spaine they coole their wine by setting the flagons in snow water.

M. Que vinos quiere v.m.

\* Ribadavia a whitish sacke growing in Galicia about a village called Ribadavia.

G. De todos géneros, blancos, tinto, halóque, claréte, cándia, ribadavia, san Martín, toro, y sidra, porque aya de todo.

\* Wine of S. Martin the most delicate wine of Spaine growing about S. Martin a towne in the kingdom of Toledo in Spaine.

P. Aquí viene el señor don Rodrigo.

G. O señor. v.m.y las buenos años.

R. Befo a v.m. las manos.

G. Como está. v.m. parece que coxea.

R. Dime vn golpe a el apear de el cavallo en esta espinilla.

G. En ora mala sea, veámos si es algo.

R. \* No señor, si no que es como dicen dolor de cobdo, dolor de espóso, duele mucho y dura poco.

G. Mas vale anfi.

\* Because they have had small conversation together to increase loue.

R. Como tiene. v.m. a mi señora doña Maria y a toda su casa?

G. A seruício de. v.m. aunque ella por no aver me ynbidia dixo, que pues yo comía con mis amigos, ella se quería yra comer con sus amigas.

R. Hizo su merced muy discretamente, en pagarle a v.m. en la misma moneda.

M. Todos estos señores conbidados están aqui, y la comida a punto quando vuestras mercedes fueren servidos, se podran asentár.

G. \* Señor don Lorenço. v.m. tiene las mañas de el Rey que adonde no está no le hallan.

L. Y v.m. quiere parecerse Alcina de quien dize Orlando que por engaño, trayalos hombres a gozár de sus regálos.

G. Però, no serán vuestras mercedes convertidos en animales como ella hazia.

L. \* No me aseguro, que dexé de bolverse

Dutch, but of all these extremes, compound me a meane after the Spanish fashion.

V. So shall it be as your worship commandeth.

G. Let your chiefeest care be that the meat be hot, and \* the drinke coole.

V. What wines will your worship haue?

G. Of all sortes, white sacke, deepe red brackish wine, hallocke, claret, candie, \* Ribadavia, \* S. Martin, Toro, and Cider, for that there may be of euery sorte.

P. Heere commeth master Roderick.

G. Oh sir you are as welcome as the good yeere.

R. Sir I thank you hartely.

G. How do you sir, it seemes you halt.

R. I bit my selfe a blowe in lighting from my horse, in this shin bone.

G. In ill time, let vs see if it be any thing.

R. No sir, it is (as they say) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the sorrore of a bridegrome, \* it greeneth much and is quickly done.

G. It is the better.

R. How doth my lady Mary your wife, and all your familie.

G. At your seruice, although she saies (not because she enuies me) that since I banquet with my friends, she would go to dinner to hir friends.

R. She dealt very discretely to paie you with the same money.

V. All the gentlemen that are innited are heere, and dinner is readie, when your worships please, you may sit downe.

G. Sir Lorenço you haue the propertie of a king, that where he is not, there they finde him not.

L. And you will be like Alcina of whom Orlando maketh mention, which brought men to take pleasure in her dainties to entrap them.

G. But you shall not be turned into beastes as she turned them.

L. I am not assured of that, for some of vs may



*Diálogos.*

vérfé alguno en çorra.

- R. \* De buen vino quien quiera se caça vna en el año.
- G. Cada vno su alma en su palma, qual el tiempo tal sea el tiénito. Ea Señores tómen fillas v. s. mercedes y fienten fe.
- L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas cosas contemplár vn rato la curiosidad de la méfa.
- R. \* No tiene mas pieças vn juego de mastre corál, que están hechas de las servilletas.
- O. Yo aqui vco vna galéra, que no le falta más, que la chufina y palaménta.
- M. Pues acá está vn cavalloque no sé yo, si el cavallo de Tróya éra tan bien hécho.
- L. Amime ha caído enfuerte el escudo de Hércules.
- R. Y este que está aqui, que es?
- M. A mi me paréçe, que vna pirámida de las de Egipto.
- O. O es el sepulcro de máusalo, o la torre de babel.
- G. Aóra déxen esso vueffas, marcédes y fientenfe, si son servidos.
- R. No se puede dexár de mirár el castillo de la enfaláda.
- L. Por mi vida, que no tiéne mejór vista el de Milán.
- G. Si cada cosa se ha de mirár de por sí, yr se nos ha el dia en flóres. Cada vna tire su filla, que ésta no es méfa de cumpliméntos.
- O. No los déve avér entre amigos.
- G. Yo soy ynimiçiflumo de çerimónias.
- R. \* A mi no me paréçen bien ningunas, si no son las que haze la yglésia.
- G. Ola, plátos, tome v. m. esse señór don Lorénço.
- L. Haga v. m. para sí, que lo mismo hará cada vno.
- R. No se qual sea mejór vfo este que vñamos en España o el que se vña en ynglaterra.

G. Que

*Dialogues.*

19

may suffer himselfe to be \* turned \* i. To be drunk into a foxe.

- R. Who so ever loves good wine, \* hunts the \* i. Whips the foxe once a yeere. cat, or is drunke once a yeere.
- G. Every one holdes free will in his hands, as the time requires so frame thy desires. Goto gentlemen betake your selues to your chaires and sit downe.
- L. Suffer vs I praie above all things to be holde a while the curiosities of this table.
- R. A inglar hath no more inuentions and peeces then are made in these \* table napkins. \* Table napkins at a banquet or inuiting in Spaine set out with diuers fashions, as of beastes, birds, &c. thus the Macestre sala alwaies doth.
- O. I see heere a gally, there wants nothing but the gallie staves and the oares.
- M. And here is a horse, that I know not if the horse of Troy were so wel made.
- L. And heere hath fallen to my lot Hercules shielde.
- R. And this which is heere what is it?
- M. It seemes to me to be one of the \* Pyramids of Egypt. \* There were many Pyramids, but two of them were reckoned one of the seven wonders of the world.
- O. Or it is Mausolus \* Tombe, or the tower of Babel.
- G. Now leave off this, and sit downe if it please you.
- R. One cannot choose but looke vpon the sallet made like a castle.
- L. In faith the castle of Milan is no better to see to.
- G. If we must stand to behold every thing by it selfe, the time will be gone without doing any thing. Euerie one draw his chaire, for this is not a table of complements.
- O. They ought not to be among friends.
- G. I am the greatest enemy in the worlde to ceremonies.
- R. None of them seeme good vnto me, except it be those which the church makes.
- G. Hola, \* dishes. Take this sir Lorenzo. \* They eate in little dishes their meate & not vpon trenchers in Spaine.
- L. Make a dish for your selfe, for euerie one will do the like.
- R. I knowe not which is the better custome which we vse in Spaine, or that which is vsed in England.

G. What

G. Que es el vso de ynglaterra?  
 R. Comer primero lo cozido, que lo asado, nos otros hazémos a el revés.

L. Segun reglas de medicina primero se déven comer los manjares que son mas duros de digestión

G. Y está esso en razón para que se venga a hazer la digestión en vn tiempo.

L. Pues que sea mas duro de digestión, lo asado que lo cozido, es cosa clara.

O. Yo como soy mas goloso, hallo otra razón.

L. Qual es?

O. Que toda cosa asada, es mas sabrosa que la cozida, y álli, yo lo querría a el principio por que sobre buen cimiento buen edificio se haze.

\* He that is silent gathereth reasons to confute his adversary.  
 Me. Pues yo aunque callo, piedras apañó.

R. Anda v. m. discreto, que obéja que bala bocado pierde.

G. A mi me parece que andan ya en seco estos molinos.

L. De la boca me lo quitó v. m.

G. Pues si yo lo quité, justo es que yo lo ponga. Ola, dad nos de bever, cada vno pida lo que mas gusto le diere, que de todo ay.

R. Páje yo soy muy devoto de a quel santo que partió la capa con el pobre.

\* Saint Martin gave a peece of his cloake to a poore man, and wine of Saint Martin the most daintie of all Spaine.  
 P. A buen entendedor pocas palabras, de lo de sant Martin quiere v. m.

R. O como eres discreto, Dios me de siempre contienda, con quien me entienda.

L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui torero, y me holgava siempre con \* toros bravos.

G. Señores yo brindo a quien tosiere.

\* He alludes to wine of Toro, wines called vino de Toro, which is a Bull, as also a townes name.  
 O. ❖ Vala me Dios y que resfriados que estamos todos, no se tóse mas en vn fermón de quaréma.

R. Esta gracia, dizen que tenemos los Españoles que somos como monas

G. What is the maner of England?

R. To eat their sodde meate first before their roast, we doe quite contrarie.

L. According to the rules of Physicke, men ought first to eat those meates which are most hard of digestion.

G. And that stands with reason, because digestion may be made together.

L. Then that roastmeate is more hard of digestion then the sodde, it is a thing out of doubt.

O. I that am a great eater, finde another reason.

L. What is it?

O. That every thing roasted is more sweet to the taste then the sodde, and so therefore woulde I have it at the first, for upon a good foundation, a good building is made.

M. \* Although I hold my peace, I gather up stones.

R. You saie very right, for that sleepe that bleateth looseth a bit.

G. Me thinks these milles go now drie.

L. You tooke it out of my mouth.

G. If I tooke it out, it is reason I should put it in. Holda give us drinke, everie one aske for that which he likes best, for there is of every sorte.

R. Page, I have great deuotion to that \* Saint which departed with a peece of his cloake to a poore man.

P. To a good understander a worde is enough, you woulde have that of Saint Martin.

R. O how you are in the right, God send me to dispute alway with him that understandeth what I say.

L. I was once a courser of buls, and I alwaies tooke pleasure in fierce \* buls.

G. Gentlemen, I drinke to him that shall cough.

O. God blesse me, and what coldes we have all taken, there is not more coughing in a lense sermon.

R. This fashion (they say) that we Spaniards have, that we are as apes, which

*Diálogos.*

mónas amigos de hazér lo que  
vémos hazér a otros.

L. \* Anfi dize vn refrán, si no hago lo  
que véo, todo me méo.

G. Cada vno asga de su perdíz, y la  
aderéce como mejor le pareci-  
ére, ay altán limónes, limas, na-  
ránjas, pimienta, y todo lo de-  
más.

R. \* La perdiz, dizen los médicos, que  
se a de comer entre tres com-  
pañeros para que no haga mal.

L. Tienen razón que han de ser el  
hombre, vn gato, y vn perro.

O. Vuestras mercedes no han notado  
la variedad de assados que aqui  
nos han traído.

R. Que está debaxo de aquella enra-  
mada?

G. Vna cabeça de javalí.

R. Estónçes ramos de taverna son a-  
quellos.

L. Antes a el contrario que el ramo en  
la taberna llama a los borrachos  
a el vino, y aquellos llaman a el  
misino vino, así como la piedra  
ymán el azéro.

O. A Señor Mendoza partí de esse  
Xigóte con vuestros amigos.

M. \* Señor el mio murió súpito.

R. Parece que haveis respondido, un  
gran Adesfio. i. disparate.

O. Pues aunque lo parece, no le es, que  
a su provecho ha hablado el señ-  
ór Mendoza.

R. Pues, si no nos lo declara, no saldre-  
mos de dubda.

M. Señor, es el caso, que dos compa-  
ñeros llegaron a una venta y co-  
mo no uviéssse otra cosa que ce-  
nár, que una gallina assada, el  
uno de ellos que tenía buena  
hambre, y era hombre astuto,  
dixo a el otro compañero, en-  
tanto que yo apáro esta gallina,  
contáme de que murió vue-  
stro padre: el otro se començó  
a enternecer, y con lágrimas le  
relaró un proceso bien largo de  
la enfermedad de su padre, y  
como avía muerto, en lo qual  
tardó

*Dialogues.*

21

*which doe that which they see o-  
thers to doe.*

L. *So saith the proverbe, If I doe not what  
I see, I all to be pisse me.*

G. *Euery one fasten on his partridge and  
order him as best shall seeme good  
unto him, there are limons and  
oranges, pepper, and all things else.*

R. *A partridge, as phisitions say, is to be  
eaten betweene three companions,  
that he may doe no harme.*

L. *They say true, that is, betweene a man,  
a cat and a dog.*

O. *You haue not marked the varietie of  
the roast, which here they haue  
brought vs.*

R. *What is under those greene boughes?*

G. *The head of a wilde boare.*

R. *Then it is the bush of a tauerne.*

L. *Rather the contrarie, for the tauerne  
bush inuities those that lone drinke  
to the wine, and these boughes in-  
uities or drawes unto it wine it  
selfe, euen as the loadstone draw-  
eth to it Steele.*

O. *A master Mendoza part this roast leg  
of mutton with your friends.*

M. *Sir mine died suddenly.*

R. *It seemes you haue answered with a  
speech quite beside the purpose.*

O. *Although it seeme, it is not so, for ma-  
ster Mendoza hath spoken it for  
his aduantage.*

R. *But if he do not expound it, we shall not  
know what it meanes.*

M. *Sir, this it is, that two companions came  
to an Inne, vpon the high way, and  
as there was nothing else to suppe  
withall, but one hen roasted: one  
of them which was well hungrie &  
a craftie fellow, saide to the other  
companion, in the meane while that  
I breake vp and order this hen, re-  
count unto me whereof your father  
died. The other began to be tender  
harted, and with teares related vn-  
to him a long processe of the sicknes  
of his father, & how he died, wher-  
in he stood so long, that when he re-  
membred*



tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro se avía comido, casi toda la gallina, el hallando se burlado, quiso esquitarse y dixo le compañero, pues yo os he contado la muerte de mi padre, contáme vos, la, de el vuestro, el compañero, por no perder La parte que le quedava y concluir presto razones, respondió, Señor, el mío murió súbito: con la qual Repuesta el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachar lo que faltava.

R. Pues aquí no corre ese riesgo.

M. No, pero yo soy como el cuclillo que no canto bien hasta que tengo el estómago lleno.

L. Con licencia de el señor Guzman quiero ymbiar esta pella de manjar blanco a un amigo.

G. Con mi licencia no yrá sola si no la acompaña v. m. con aquel pávo, o este faisán o el francolin.

R. Por vida de don Lorenzo es amigo o amiga?

L. \* Queréis que confiese sin tormento.

G. \* Y quando os le den antes mártir que confessor.

O. \* O que reverenda que viene nuestra madre la olla.

R. Y bien adornada de todas sus pertenencias.

M. Yo deséo saber, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrida?

L. Metaforicamente, porque así como en vn muladar se púden muchas cosas diferentes, y de todas se haze la basura así la olla que es compuesta de muchas cosas se viene a hazer vn guizado o potaje.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue esta como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

O. Por mi passatempo yo me quiero poner a contar de quantas cosas está compuesta su merced de nuestra olla, carnero, vaca, tocino.

d.L. \* Estas

memberd himselfe, the other had already eaten almost all the hen, he finding himselfe mocked, would quite himselfe, and saide unto him, companion, seeing I have told you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not loose that part which remained, and because he would be short answered, Sir, my father died suddenly, with which answer he gave his fellow a scoffe, and himselfe time to dispatch the rest.

R. But here is not the like danger.

M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which sing not untill I have my stomacke full.

L. With leave of Master Guzman, I will send this round ball of \* Manjar blanco to a friend.

G. With my leave it shall not goe alone, but that you accompanie with it, this peacock, this feasant, or this francolin bird.

R. I pray you hartely Sir Lorenzo, is it a he friend or she friend?

L. Will you that I confesse without the racke?

G. And when they doe racke you, rather proove a martyr then a confessor.

O. On what a reverend person comes here, our mother the meate.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.

M. I desire to knowe, from whence or why they called it \* Olla podrida.

L. Metaphorically, because even as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all these they make dung for the field: even so the pot which is compounded of many things is made one iellie or potage.

M. This was as good a metaphor as that of him, which called the king the keeper of hogs.

O. For my recreation I will set my selfe to reckon, of how many things this worshipfull the pot, is compounded, first mutton, beefe, and bacon.

L. These

\* A meat made of breasts of hens, milke, sugar, rice beaten, and spices mixed withall, one of the daintiest meates ysed.

\* A rotten or putrified pot. Also a hotch-potch of many meates together



*Diálogos.*

*Dialogues.*

23

- d.L. ✱ Estas son las tres potencias de la olla como las de la alma, memoria, entendimiento, voluntad.
- O. Luego se figue repollo, navos, cebollas, ajos.
- d.L. ✱ Estas son las quatro virtudes cardinales.
- O. Cerveças y pies de aves, culantro verde, alcarabea, cominos, todas especias, las de mas yerbas, y no las conosco, otro las quente.
- d.R. Lo que yo contare despues, será lo bien que me ha sabido.
- d.L. De el marques chapin vitelo Ytaliano, que fue uno de los mas valientes soldados que ha tenido aquella nación, se cuenta que quando fue a España le diron tanto gusto estas ollas, que nunca querría comer en su casa, si no que yendo por la calle oía en casa de algun labrador rico, adonde se comía alguna olla de estas, y se entraba allá y se sentaba a comer con el.
- d.R. Devía lo de hazer por comer a costa agena.
- L. No, que antes que saliése mandaba a su mayordomo pagasse toda la costa de la olla.
- M. Pare, mira como pones esse plato no deribes el salero.
- L. Si, si, guarda, que es el aguero de los mendozas.
- R. Ya todos somos Mendozas en esso.
- L. Esta ristra nos quedó de la gentilidad.
- M. Hemos visto esperiencias muy verdaderas.
- O. ✱ Créo en Dios y no en putas viejas.
- M. Estas son de las que yo me procuro siempre guardar.
- R. O señor Guzman para que es esto que se trae agora?
- G. Dizen que para comer.
- R. Si, pero era menester hazer nuevos estómagos, en que echallo.
- O. Mandar los hazer de barro a trueco de
- L. These are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the soule, memorie, understanding, will.
- O. Now followe cabbage, turneps, onyons, garlicke.
- L. These be the fower cardinall vertues.
- O. The heades and feete of birdes, the herbe carobes or S. Johns herbe, comines, all sortes of spices, the most part of herbes, I knowe them not, let another speake of them.
- R. That which I will saie of it shall be the good I have tasted in it.
- L. Of marques Chapin Vitelo, an Italian, which was one of the most valiant souldiers, which that nation hath had, it is saide, that when he went to Spaine, these hodgepots liked his taste so well, that he neuer would dine in his owne house, but that going in the streete, where hee smelt in the house of any rich farmer, where any of these hodgepots were eaten, there he entred, and sate downe to diner with him.
- R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.
- L. No, for before he went out of dores hee commanded his steward, to paye all the cost of the hodgepot.
- M. Staie, looke howe thou puttest this platter, do not throwe downe the salt-seller.
- L. Tea, yea, take heede, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.
- R. We are all Mendozas in this.
- L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.
- M. Wee haue seene many true examples heereof.
- O. I beleue in God, and not in olde wintes tales.
- M. Those are they from which I alwaies seeke to keepe my selfe.
- R. O master Guzman, wherefore is this that they bring now?
- G. They saie for to eate.
- R. Tea, but it were need to make stomacks to receiue it.
- O. Cause them to bee made of claie, for a small

de poco dinero.

M. Estas tortas reales, son como cuerpo que no ocupa lugar.

\* Made of the  
beades, livers,  
harts, breastes,  
feets, of ducks  
geese, or other  
birds, &c.

\* Of paste of  
almonds and  
sugar, egges,  
breasts of hens,  
milke, cynamon,  
and diuers sorts  
of spices varie  
like Manjar  
blanco.

L. Yo tengo de provar esta pepitoria.

R. Yo conel \* manjar real me acomodo.

G. No ay quien prueve estos guisados, estos torreznos lampreados, aquel adobado, el carnero verde, las albondigas, ni lo demas.

T. \* Todo esto es como Pedro por demas.

O. O como alla voy no hago mengua.

G. Alçalo pues muchacho defembaraza y trae aquella fruta de farten.

\* Wine sodden  
to the third part  
for a sauce for  
the fritters.

P. Aqui está señor, y la meloja y todo.

R. Esto allá a los aguados, que la borracha no quiere pásala.

\* But salt meats  
to make them  
drinke.

G. Trae pues la fruta de póstre, camuésas, péras, azeitunas, nueces, javellanas, y la caja de mermelada.

L. Hasta quando hemos de comer?

R. \* Hasta enfermar, como dize el refrán.

L. Y despues ayunar hasta sanar.

O. Levanta esta mesa paje, que es ya gula tanto comer.

M. \* Yo he perdido la gana, como si me la quitáran con la mano.

L. El mejor remedio, que hallaron los filósofos, contra la hambre, fue este.

R. \* Esta filosofia algo es gruésa de hilaza.

O. Mejor se podrá dezir verdad apurada que ya sabeis lo que es.

L. \* Ya se que verdades apuradas son neçedades.

O. Mas pulido lo queria yo dezir.

R. Como?

O. Yndiscreçiones.

d.L. Tanto monta cortar, como defatar,

small price of money.

M. These riall tartes are as the bodie which filleth no place.

L. I will prooue this \* Pepitório or gallimaufrie.

R. I do applie my selfe to this riall dish of meate.

G. Is there no bodie to prooue these other meates, these hogs livers with the hoggs caule fried with the fat, that hoggepot of mutton, mutton stuffed with parsey, the chopped meat made into round bales, neither the rest.

L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. Oh as I goe there I neuer faile.

G. Take off boy, rid the table, and bring these fritters.

P. Here it is Sir, and the \* Meloja and all.

R. That there is for those that drinke water, for one that loues wine loues not to eate \* raisins.

G. Bring fruit for the last seruice, pippins, pearres, olives, wallnuts, small nuts, and the boxe of marmalade.

L. Till when shall we eate?

R. Vntill we be sicke, as saith the proverbe.

L. And afterward to fast till wee bee in health.

O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttonie to eate so much.

M. I haue lost my stomack, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. The best remedie that euer philosophers found against hunger, was this.

R. This philosophie is somewhat of a grosse breed.

O. Better may you say a refined truth, you know what I meane.

L. I knowe that refined trutthes are fooleries.

O. I would giue it a better terme.

R. How?

O. Indiscretions.

L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or vntie it,

*Diálogos.*

tár, como dixo Alexandre.

d.R. Ola paje, tráe unos naipes entre-  
tengámos el tiempo.

M. Eſſo me contémta, vengan que deſ-  
ſeo eſquitár me de un eſcudo  
que perdí eſtótto día.

d.L. \* No me péſa ami de que mi hijo  
júegue, ſino de que ſe quiere  
eſquitár. \*

M. El tahur, chica ocaſión ha menester  
para bolvér a el juego.

d.L. A mi me parece que ſola una.

M. Qual es?

d.L. Tener dineros.

M. Nial tahúr faltó que jugar, nial go-  
lóſo que comer, nial endurador  
que endurár, nial borácho que  
bever.

d.R. Aqui eſtán los naipes, que jugaré-  
mos.

d.L. Juguémos gana piérde.

M. Es juego de mucha flema.

d.L. Pues ſea a el triunfo.

M. Quéde para los viejos.

d.L. A les çientos.

M. Deſvançe ſe me la cabeça, de eſtár  
ſiempre contádo.

d.L. Menos os agradará el chilindrón.

M. Eſſe para las mugeres de tras de  
los tiçiones.

d.L. No es, ſino que vos no querçis ju-  
ego de virtud, ſi no de arreba-  
ta cápas.

M. Para que heinos de eſtár gaſtádo  
\* tiempo, ſino lo que ſe a de em-  
peñar, venda ſe, como dizen.

d.R. Si, por que hazienda hécha, no da  
prieſſa.

d.L. \* Y mas quando le gánan a el hom-  
bre ſu dinero, le quitan preſto  
decurdádo.

M. He aqui eſtán los naipes juguémos  
treinta por fuérça, o los albúres  
que todos eſtos ſon buenos ju-  
egos.

d.R. Yo no ſoy amigo de ellos, ſino de  
juegos de primór, como el Rey-  
nádo, el tres dos y as, triunfo  
calládo y ótros ſemejantes.

O. Ora

*Dialogues.*

25

*it, as Alexander ſaid.*

R. *Hola page, bring cardes, let vs paſſe a-  
way the time.*

M. *That pleaſeth me well, let them come,  
for I deſire to quit my ſelfe of a  
crowne, that I loſt this other day.*

L. *It greenes me not that my ſonne is a  
gameſter, but that he will goe to  
quit himſelfe.*

M. *The gameſter requirerh but ſmall oc-  
caſion to returne to pleaſe.*

L. *It ſeemes to me but one onely.*

M. *What is it?*

L. *That he haue money to doe it.*

M. *Neither hath the gameſter euer wan-  
ted money to play, nor the gluſto-  
nous to eate nor the patient to ſuf-  
fer, nor the louer of drinke to  
drinke.*

R. *Here are the cards, what ſhall we play  
at?*

L. *Let vs play at loadam.*

M. *It is a plaie of much patience.*

L. *Then let it be at trumpe.*

M. *Let that be for old men.*

L. *At mount ſant.*

M. *It makes my head to be in a ſwonne, to  
be alwaies counting.*

L. *Leſſe will the play of Chilindrón like  
you.*

M. *That is for women by the fire ſide.*

L. *It is not, but that you will not haue any  
game of vertue but ſweepe ſtake  
play.*

M. *Wherefore ſhould we waſte time, but  
that which we muſt payne, let vs  
ſell our right as they ſay.*

R. *Yea, but ones ſubſtance made vp, let  
there be no haſte to loſe ones mo-  
ney.*

L. *And moreouer, when they win a mans  
money from him, they ſtraightway  
take him out of care.*

M. *Behold here are the cardes, let vs play  
at thirtie perforce or Albures, for  
theſe are good plaies.*

R. *I lone not theſe but games of chiefeſt  
price, as the Reynádo, the three,  
two and ace, ſtill trumpe, and other  
the like.*

m i O. Now

- O. Ora por quitár todos de contiéndá yo quiero dar vn médio y sea este la primera.
- M. Muy bien avéis dicho que es médio entre los estrénos.
- d.L. Yo entiendo que se llamó primera, porque tiene el primero lugar entre los juegos de náypes.
- d.R. Alto, que ha de ser el tanto?
- M. Quatro reales y dies y seis de saca.
- d.L. Pues barajá estos naipes bien.
- O. Yo algo por mano, figura úvo de sér, no querría yo yr hecho figura sin blanca.
- d.R. Yo un ás alcé.
- d.L. Yo un quátro.
- M. Yo vn seis, con que soy mano.
- O. Vengan las cartas que yo las doy una, dos, tres, quatro. Vna, dos, tres, quatro.
- M. Paso.
- d.R. Paso.
- d.L. Paso.
- O. Enbído un tanto.
- M. Nole quiero.
- d.R. Nole quiero.
- d.L. Yo por fuerça avré de querér, echád cartas.
- M. Echad me quatro cartas he aqui mi tanto.
- d.R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el suyo.
- M. Buelvo a pasár.
- d.R. Yo tambien.
- d.L. Yo hago lo própío.
- O. Yo enbído mi restó.
- M. Quiero le.
- d.R. Yo tambien.
- b.L. Pues yo no me puedo echár.
- M. Yo híze una primerilla.
- d.L. Yo voy a flux.
- M. No querría yo que le hiziéssedes.
- d.L. Es éssa buena promixidad?
- M. ✱ La caridad bien ordenáda comi-  
énça de si mismo.
- O. Yo he hecho cinquenta y cinco con que máto su primera.
- d.L. Yo flux con que tiro.
- d.R. No juego masa éste juego.
- M. Ni yo a ótro ninguno que voy a vn  
negócio

- O. Now to take away all occasion of strife, I will give a meane, and let it be Primera.
- M. You have saide very well, for it is a meane betweene extremes.
- L. I take it that it is called Primera, because it hath the first place at the play at cardes.
- R. Let vs goe, what is the summe that we play for?
- M. Two shillings stake, and eight shillings rest.
- L. Then shuffle the cardes well.
- O. I list to see who shall deale, it must be a coate card, I would not be a coat with neuer a blanke in my purse.
- R. I did list an ace.
- L. I a fower.
- M. I a sixe, whereby I am the eldest hand.
- O. Let the cardes come to me, for I deale them, one, two, three, fower, one, two, three, fower.
- M. Passe.
- R. Passe.
- L. Passe.
- O. I set so much.
- M. I will none.
- R. Ile none.
- L. I must of force see it, deale the cards.
- M. Give me fower cards, Ile see as much as he sets.
- R. See heere my rest, let every one be in.
- M. I am come to passe againe.
- R. And I too.
- L. I do the selfe same.
- O. I set my rest.
- M. Ile see it.
- R. I also.
- L. I cannot give it over.
- M. I was a small prime.
- L. I am flush.
- M. I would you were not.
- L. Is this good neighbourhood?
- M. Charitie well placed, doth first beginne with ones selfe.
- O. I made five and fiftie, with which I win his prime.
- L. I flush whereby I draw.
- R. I play no more at this play.
- M. Neither I at any other, for I must goe  
about



*Diálogos.*

negócio que me ympórta.

d.L. Pajes toma cada quatro reales de baráto.

Pa. Centuplum accipias.

Pa. En el çielo lo halle v.m. colgado de vn garaváto.

Diálogo quarto, entre dos amigos llamados el uno Mora, el otro Aguilar y un moço de mulas y una Ventérra, trátan se en el de las cosas tocantes a el camino con muy graciosos dichos y chistes.

*Dialogues.*

27

*about abuses that concerns me.*

L. Pages take euerie one two shillings a peece of the winnings.

P. I pray God you may receiue it a hundred fold.

P. In heauen I pray God you may finde it hanged on a hooke.

*The fourth Dialogue betweene two friends, the one called Mora, the other Aguilar and a muletter and a woman Inkeeper: Heerein are handled things pertaining to the way with very pleasant sayings, and gracious speeches.*

M. O La Pedro havéis traído mi mula?

P. Señor si, aquí está la mohína.

M. Mohina es nunca buena.

P. Por que, Señor?

M. \* Por que ni mula mohína, ni moça marína, ni moço Pedro en cáfa, ni Abád por Vezino, ni poyo a la puerta, no es bueno.

P. Yo le prométo a v.m. que es mejor ésta, que la que arastró a el cura quando dezia Dominus providebit.

M. Esvieja?

P. Nunca la vi naçer, mas yo créo que mas vieja era su madre.

M. Tira cozes?

P. Nunca una sola.

M. Siempre son a pares, camina bien?

P. Todo lo que anda se dexa atrás.

M. Tan buenas gracias tiene a fee que me va enamorando.

P. Vna tiene sobre todas que es grande Ostróloga.

M. Como así?

P. Conoce mejor que vn relóx quando es medio dia, y luego pide çebada, y si no se la dan dize lunas

M. H O Peter haue you brought my mule?

P. Yea sir, heere is the \* Mohina.

M. Mohina is neuer good.

P. Why sir?

M. \* Because neither a mule with a blacke muffle, nor a maide that hath passed the sea, nor a seruant \* Peter in ones house, nor a neighbour about, nor a Well at the dore, is euer good.

P. I promise your worship that she is better then that which dragged along \* the curate when he said, Dominus providebit.

M. Is she old?

P. I sawe hir not foaled, but I beleene that hir dame was elder.

M. Doth she kicke?

P. Shee neuer giues one alone.

M. They are alwaies by couples, doth shee tranell well?

P. She neuer tranels but shee leaues the way behinde her.

M. She hath so good tricks in faith, that I am in loue with her.

P. One she hath aboue all, for she is a great Astronomer.

M. How so?

P. She knowes better then a clocke when it is noone, and forthwith she lookes for promender, and if they

\* Mohina, signifies anger, passion, disquietnes, churlishnes. Also a shee mule with a blacke face or muffle, alwaies having iadish tricks.  
\* i. A knaues seruant.

\* A curate falling off his mule hanging in the stirrup was dragged so a long, till a labourer in the field tooke him out.

\* Lunes, meaning heere the grunting voice of a mule or horse, but Lunes properly signifieth Monday.

lunes y no ay passár de allí.

\* A scabbed horse fit for a scald squier.

\* The waxe of the candle, and the weeke of the candle, i. al in al

\* Manos, i. the forefeete.

\* With kicking.

M. Buen remedio para esso rogár se lo con la espuela.

P. Es flaquísima de memoria.

M. Como?

P. Aunque le hinguen vn palmo de espuela a dos passos que da, se le ha ya olvidado.

M. \* Traélda, no se me da náda, que topado ha Sancho con su Roçino y si ella es traydora yo soy alcoboso, y nos entenderémos a coplas.

P. \* En yendo v.m. con cuydado hará de ella çera y Pávilo que ella con quien se descuyda úa sus tretas.

M. Echalde la silla, apretálde bien la sincha ponélde gurupéra atahárre y pretál, acorta ellos estribos que yo me averné con ella.

P. Quiero ponér, vnas acciones nuévas por mas seguridad.

M. Echálde el freno, ponéd le bien el bocádo y acortád la cabeçada mirád si está bien herráda de todos quatro pies.

P. \* En las mãos, buenas herraduras y clávos tiene, de los pies de fuyo gasta.

M. Echálde el coxín y porta mantéo.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de salir oy de aquí?

M. Ya vos venís cavalgando?

A. \* Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbia.

M. Vuestra mula es manía?

A. Como vna borrega no lo veis que sufre maléta.

M. \* De el águá mánza me libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

A. A la vuestra, basta le ser mohína.

M. Mal conocéys vos a quien nunca viestes, pues a fee que está granduáda por zalamánca.

A. En

gine her none, then she saies \* lunes, and stirres not a foote from the place.

M. A good remedie for this to intreat her with the spurre.

P. She is moit weake of memorie.

M. How?

P. Although you strike into her a hands breadth of the spurre, within two steps after she hath forgotten it.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his palfrey, and if she be a \* knauiß iade I am as knauiß a rider, and we shall vnderstand one another by coples.

P. You travelling with hir, with good beed, you may agree like the \* waxe and the weeke, but shee with one that is not aware of hir will plaie hir part like a fencer.

M. Set on the saddle, girdle hir harde with the girts, put on the crooper and poitrell, make shorter these stirrups, for I will make agreement with hir.

P. I will put on newe stirrup leathers for more securitie.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit fast, make shorter the headstall, looke if she be well shod of all fower feete.

P. On the forefeete she hath good shooes and nailes, on the binder feete she \* weares out hir owne hoofs.

M. Put the cushion on the saddle and the portemanteau.

A. How now companion, shall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. What are you come already, and a horsebacke?

A. You tarrie longer in setting your selfe in order then a bride.

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. As gentle as a lambe, do you not see he beares a maile.

M. From the stil water, God keepe me, from the raging, I will keepe my selfe.

A. For your mule, it is sufficient, that she is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. You hardly know him whom you neuer saw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamánca.

A. In

*Diálogos.*

A. En que facultad?  
M. En la de la vellaquería, bachillera en artes de tirar cózes, licenciada en leyes de ventasy de mesónes, y doctóra es en astrología y matemáticas.  
A. Por esso está siempre mirando a el çielo.  
M. Es por contemplár los ástros y planetas y signos y sus cùrsus.  
A. Vámos de aquí que tenemos larga la jornada.  
M. Quantas leguas pensáis caminar oy?  
A. Yè querría que doze.  
M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten esse estribo.  
A. Pedro os Llamáis compañero?  
P. A servício de v.m.  
A. Pues no le haga Dios mas mal a Pedro de el que se le alcánça.  
P. No ay porque Dios de salud a su merçéd.  
A. Sé que las pullas no se han de echár a los amigos.  
M. \* De amigo a amigo chinche en el ójo.  
A. Yo no quiero pléito con vos Pedro, que sabéis mucho.  
P. Mas \*Sábe vn torézno.  
A. Moço de mulas vn punto save mas que el diáblo.  
M. Pues que pensáis vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?  
P. No mas que vn año de aprendiz y vn garavato.  
A. Para que el garavato?  
P. Para facár a vuestras merçédes de la caldera quando allá váyan.  
M. Nosotros no hemos de yr a el ynfiérno  
P. No se yrán mas lleváros hán.  
M. Are dro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diabole.  
A. Pedro amigo de que se haze la puta vicja?  
P. De la puta móça.  
M. No se haze sino de seldo y eneldo y de el cagaxón mordeldo y de el polvo de las \* éras.

A. De

*Dialogues.*

29

A. *In what arte?*  
M. *In the arte of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in lmes, and doctör in Astrologie, and the Mathematikes.*  
A. *For this cause, shee looks alwaies towards heauen.*  
M. *It is to contemplate the stars, planets, and signes, and their courses.*  
A. *Let vs go, for we haue a long iourney.*  
M. *How many leagues do you thinke to trauell to day?*  
A. *I would willingly go twelue.*  
M. *Then in the name of God, Peter holde this stirrup.*  
A. *Friend are you called Peter?*  
M. *At your seruice sir.*  
A. *Then God do no more mischief to Peter, then that he knowes himselfe how to practise.*  
P. *There is no cause why God giue you bealth sir.*  
A. *I know that men ought not to flout their friends.*  
M. *One friend to another friend, a \* Cinche* \* Chinche, a little rounde creature with many feete, in hot countries, breeding in beds, bites worse then a louse, and sinketh filthily.  
A. *I will not go to law with you Peter, for that you know so much.*  
P. *A rasber of bacon saues more.*  
P. *A mulster knowes one point more then the diuell.*  
M. *Why what thinke you, what wants Peter to become a diuell?*  
P. *No more but a yeeres apprenticeship, and a flesh-hooke.*  
A. *Why a flesh-hooke?*  
P. *To pull out your worships out of the caulderne when you go thither.*  
M. *We are not to go to hell.*  
P. *You are not to go, but they are to carrie you thither.*  
M. *Come behinde me therefore euill spirit, Maledicte diabole.*  
A. *Friend Peter, of what is an old whore made of?*  
P. *Of a yoong whoore.*  
M. *It is not made but of thy selfe and the floore where herb dill, & of sitting eate thy fill, & they thresh of the dust of barn floore, or of the dust their corne, and of which thou art thy selfe.*  
\* éras, hath two significations, one for the floore where they thresh their corne, and also thow art.

m 3

A. I

\* Shoes of  
packthred made  
for footemen or  
lackeies to tra-  
uell a foote.

A. De cara me le véo y tiéne alpargá-  
tes, y va a pié.

M. Pedro mira que te dize no respón-  
des?

P. \* No óygo que soy fordo de vna  
mucla.

M. \* Pues a el maestro Cuchilláda?

P. No me lastima mucho esta Herida  
que es dáda vñas arriba, però  
guarde se de el rebés que yo ti-  
raré vñas abájo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que soys vos aquel  
que Llamávan de vrde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que  
alguna téngo de vrdir en este  
camíno.

A. Pedro alli viéne vn, caminante échale  
vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En casa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compañero  
que quéda atrás.

P. A señór es fuyo el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que beféis en el cúlo.

A. Este cavalléro que viene muy brábo  
no baya sin la fuya.

P. A señór v.m. a caso va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezís.

P. Pues cagaxón para quien va a Lon-  
dres.

M. Que bonito es Pedro si se lavasse.

P. Antes despues de lavado no valgo  
nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andádo Pedro?

P. \* Nunca buelvo a mirár atrás, por  
no ser como la mugér de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aqui a el primer  
Pueblo?

P. Legua y miérda.

M. La legua andarémos nosotros, esotra  
vos la pafaréis.

A. Pues por que se pásse sin sentir quen-  
ta vn quento Pedro.

P. De dinéros para mi le contára yo de  
buena gana.

A. No

A. I see him inist over against me, and he  
hath \* shoes of packthred, and hee  
goes a foote.

M. Peter, heake what he saith unto thee,  
doest thou not answere?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my  
chocke teeth.

M. What hath the master of Fence a blowe  
or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much, for it is  
giuen with the hand upward, but  
beware of the swash blow, for I will  
draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I vnderstande that you are hee  
which they called a plotter of kna-  
ueries?

P. Euerie one looke to himselfe, for I must  
plot somthing this iourney.

A. Peter there cometh a traveller, be-  
stowe a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way go they?

T. Whither?

P. To the house of the queane thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his compani-  
on, which remaines behind.

P. Ho sir, is the mule yours?

T. What mule?

P. That whose arse kisse you.

A. This gentleman which goeth so bodily,  
let him not passe without his flout.

P. Ho sir goes your worship to London?

T. Yea, I go for that you saie it.

P. Then a turd for him that geeth to Lon-  
don.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he  
were washed and painted.

P. Nay after I am washed I am worth no-  
thing.

A. How far haue we tourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, because I  
would not be as Lots wife.

A. How far haue we from hence to the  
next towne?

P. Aleague and a turd.

M. The league we will goe, the other thou  
shalt passe.

A. That we may passe over this iourney  
without wearisomnes, tell vs a tale  
Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a  
better will.

A. Not



*Diálogos.*

A. No, si no algun acacçido que te avino por ellos caminos.

P. Estonces contar les hé vno que me subcedió el viáje passado haziendo este camino con vn hidalgo.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Síse dormire la mohina tendrá cuydado de despertár le.

M. Vos le havéis levantado mil falsos testimonios, mira quan bien camina y quan mansa va?

P. \* A el freír lo verá.

A. Ea dexémos esto vaya el quento.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo vine este camino con vno de los mayores habladores que he conoçido en mi vida y como el hablar mucho, y el mentir son tan parientes, dezía las mas terribles mentiras que se pueden ymaginár, pues como el me preguntasse vn dia que me parecia de su buena conversaçion, yo le respondi que muy bien, pero que quando contasse algun quento, se Alargasse y passasse tanto, que dava que morimurar a quantos le oyan, el me dixo pues sea esta la manera quando lleguemos a las posadas, sienta se tu apar de mi, y si me viéres contar algo que te parezca que voy fuera de camino, tira me de la halda, estonçes yo entenderé, y me deterné, con este con çierto llegamos aquella noche a vna venta, donde a caso avian llegado tambien muchos cavalléros, y como se asentassen a çenár y mi amo entre ellos, yo me puse a su lado conforme a el conçierto, y como es costumbre cada vno començó a contar las maravillas que avia visto por el mundo, llegó la bez a el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo que avia estado en tierra de japon, y que entre otras cosas maravillosas que alli avia visto fue vna yglézia que tenía mil pies de largo, a este tiempo yo que le

vide

*Dialogues.*

31

A. Not so, but some chauce that hath fallen out to mee on these waies.

P. Then I will tell you one which happened unto me the last voyage I came this way with a gentleman.

M. Let it not be too long for I will sleepe.

P. If you sleepe, the she mule will be carefull to wake you.

M. You have raised a thousand false testimonies against her, behold how well she travelleth, and how well she goeth.

P. \* By the frying you shall see.

A. Well let vs leave this, forward with the tale.

P. A little while since, I came this way with one of the greatest babblers that I knew in my life, and as much prating and lying are neere of kinne, hee tolde the most horrible lies that could be imagined, afterward as he asked me one daie, what I thought of his good behaviour, I made him answer, that I thought well, but that when hee did tell any tale, hee passed the bounds so much, that he gave occasion to as many as did heare him, to speake ill of him behinde his backe: he tolde me, seeing it is so, when we come to our Innes, sit thou next unto me, and if thou shalt see me tell any thing that seemes unto thee that I goe out of the way, pluck me by the skirt, then will I understand and stay my selfe, with this agreement we came that night to a lodging on the high waie, whither by chauce also many gentlemen were arrived, and as they sate them downe to supper, and my master among them, I set my selfe close by his side, according to our agreement, and as the manner is, euery one began to tell of the marvels which hee had seene in the world, the turne came to the good man my master, who said that hee had bene in the lande of Iaptha, and among other marvellous things that there he had seene was a church, which was a thousand foote long:

\* A collier sold coales to a woman and putting downe his coales put up her frying pan, the woman asking if they were good coales, he answered, A freyre lo verá, i. by the frying she should see.

vide yr tan desfinándalo y como estava a lerta tiro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendió, y dixo: y vno en ancho: los cavalleros se començaron a mirár vnos a otros y a son-reyr se hásta que vno dellos dixo, vala me Dios señor, y para que servía essa yglézia tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo: y vno en ancho, el replicó agradezcan vuestras merçedes que me tiraron de la falda atiempo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrára, fue estonçes tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convino aquella noche salir se de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contáva algo que parecía mentira \* Le dezía el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto larga está.

M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.

P. Qual es?

M. Como pudiste durár tan largo tiempo con tu competidor en la facultad.

A. \* Si, por que esse es tu enemigo el que es de tu ofiçio.

P. Es verdád que muchas vezes le quise dexár por esso, y se lo dezía que no quería mas caminar con el, por que era tocado de mi própria enfermedad y no me dexava hazér bása.

\* As at cards.

A. Y que respondió a esso?

P. Luego me prometía con juraménto, que callaría toda vna jornada para que yo hablásse.

A. Y cumplía lo?

P. Tan ynposible le era a el poder lo \* cumplir cómo a v. m. dijerrir esse pelo de asno, que ha comido.

\* i. Calling him asse by craft or the gudgeons, or fooleries to day you haue swallowed.

M. Compañero pagado os han vuestro travájo.

A. No tenéis razon Pedro ansi yo os vea zarco a poder de nubes.

P. Antes ciegue, que mal véa.

A. \* Ansi yo os vea arçobíspo con mitra

long: then I seeing him so far out of order, as I was readie prepared, pluckt him by the skirt, he presently understood me, and said; and one foot in breadth: the gentlemen began to looke one upon another, and to smile, untill one of them saide, In the name of God sir, and for what use served this church so long & narrow, of a thousand foot in length, and but one in breadth? he replied, thanke him, that pulled me by the skirt of the garment so soone, which if he had not done, I vow to God, I had made it fower square: then was there such a laughter among all, that my master was faine that night to get him out of the Inne, for that among them all, it remained as a proverbe, when any one did tell any thing which did seeme a lie, the third man said unto him, make it square, for it is long enough.

M. Of one thing I woonder Peter.

P. What is it?

M. How thou couldest endure so long time, with thy competitor in thine owne facultie?

A. Yea, for he is thy enimie which is of thy owne profession.

P. It is true, for many times I would leaue him for this cause, and did tel him, that I would not tranell no more with him, because he was infected with my disease, and did not suffer me to take up \* a trick.

A. And what answer made he to this?

P. Foorthwith he promised me with an oth, that he would hold his peace all one sourney, that I might speake.

A. And did he performe it?

P. It was as impossible for him to haue power to accomplish it, as for your worship to digest this \* asses haire which you haue eaten.

M. Companion, you are paid home for your labour.

A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimmed by reason of cloudes.

P. Rather wish I you blinde, then that I see ill.

A. Nay rather that I may haue my sight

*Diálogos.*

tra de siete palmas.

- P. Anſi yo le véa a el, Pápa higos de ſu mula.
- A. \* Echo te vna pulla \* con ſu pullonçillo que tu mugér te haga çier-vo y te llámen todos cuquillo.
- P. \* Echo te vna pulla venida ſobre mar, que los dientes ſe te cáy-gan y no puedas meár.
- M. Piquémos compañéro que ſe va ha-ziendo tarde.
- A. Que hora ſerá Pedro?
- P. La de ayer a eſtas oras puntual-mente.
- A. Eſſo tambien lo dixéra mi mula ſi ſupiera hablár.
- P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregunta que ora es?
- A. \* A lo menos \* badájo, que monta tanto.
- P. Y ſi doy adonde daré?
- A. En la cabeça de el putto de tu pa-dre.
- P. Mas çerca eſtá la ſuya y ſonará bien, pues eſta huéca.
- M. Bien camina de andadúra vueſtra mula.
- A. Y la vueſtra ha bien deportánte.
- M. Si no la convirtiéſſe algunas vezes en tróte que pareçe a el de la madre.
- A. Entrémos en eſta vénta a dár çeva-da y comer vn vocádo.
- P. Vn bocádo no mas, mas piénſo yo comer de vn çiento.
- M. No os fabréis paſſár un día ſin comer Pedro?
- P. \* Par dios nuéſtro amo, como díze el vizcaíno, trípás llévan a pies que no pies a tripas.
- A. \* Yo tambien digo que pan y víno ánden camino que no moço garrido.
- P. Paz ſea en eſta caſa quien eſtá acá huéſpeda?
- V. Quien eſtá alla quien lláma?
- P. Ay poſáda ſeñora?
- V. Si ſeñór, éntren y ſéan muy bien ve-nidos que todo recádo ay.

P. Que

*Dialogues.*

33

- to ſee you an Archbiſhop with \* a miter of ſeven hand bredths high.*
- P. *Nay not ſo, but that I might alſo ſee you eat the ſhittings of your mule.*
- A. *I caſt thee a bone, with his yong one to gnawe vpon, thy wife makes thee a hari, and they call thee cuckold to euery one.*
- P. *I caſt the bone to gnaw vpon at ſea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.*
- M. *Let vs ſpurre on companion, for it wax-eth late.*
- A. *What is it a clocke Peter?*
- P. *Iuſt the ſame, as it was yeſterday at this time.*
- A. *This could my mule tell me, if ſhe could ſpeake?*
- P. *Am I a clocke, that you aſke me what it is a clocke?*
- A. *At leaſt thou art a clapper, which is all one.*
- P. *And if I do ſtrike where ſhall I hit?*
- A. *Vpon the head of the buggerer thy fa-ther.*
- P. *Your head is neere vnto me, and it will ſound well ſeeing it is hollow.*
- M. *Your mule doth go a ſwiſt eaſie paſe.*
- A. *And yours ambles well.*
- M. *If ſhe did not change it, ſometimes into a trot, which ſeemes like the trot of hir dam.*
- A. *Let vs go in into this Inne, to baite and eate a bitte.*
- P. *What one bit and no more, I thinke to eate more then a hundred.*
- M. *Can you not paſſe one daie Peter without eating?*
- P. *By God our maſter as the Biſkaine ſaith, the bellie carrieth the feete and not the feete the bellie.*
- A. *I alſo ſay, \* that bread and wine are like youth.*
- P. *Peace be in this houſe, who is heere hoſteſſe?*
- H. *Who is there, who cal?*
- P. *Haue you lodging miſtris?*
- H. *Yes Sir, come in, and be very well wel-come, for all good entertainment is here to be had.*

P. What

\* i. Caróga, which is a high bat of paper ſet on the head of a bawle, riding on an aſſe thro- row the ſtreetes for a puniſh- ment.

\* Pulla a ſcour.

\* Badájo, a clapper of a bell by a metaphor a ioulihead.

\* A Biſkaine traueſſing a foote ſainte for want of fooode, filled his belly, afterward went luſtely, & ſaid, the belly carri- eth the feete, & not the feete the bellie.

\* The luſtie youth without eating or drink- ing muſt needs faint, and giue him that, al- though he be faint he goeth forward.



- P. Que aurá que comer?
- V. Ay conéjos ay perdíçes, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay ganços, ay ánades, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrito, ay menudo de puerco.
- P. Bien díxe yo que en su casa de v.m. no podía faltár puerco.
- V. Ni en la fuya faltará vellaco, mientras el estuviére dentro.
- P. No en verdad señora, sino que me dixéron que los dias passados avía v.m. reñido bravamente con la limpieça.
- V. Tambien me dixéron a mi que avía el desterrádo la Verguença de su casa.
- M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avías menestér.
- P. Y aun ella me ha menestér a mi.
- V. \* Yo por çierto, si no es para poner le en peralvillo con doze y la maestra, no se para que?
- P. Ahora Señora no nos digámos mas calláte, y callémos que sendas nos tenemos.
- V. Ea acábe habládor de Ventája, pidalo que ha menestér.
- P. Deme hénó, y paja, y çebáda, para las mulas.
- V. Quanto quiere?
- P. Dos harnéros de hénó y un zelemín de çebáda.
- V. Muy poco es para tres véstias.
- P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la ótra?
- V. La otra sóys vos y mas tragóna que esiótras dos.
- P. Si soy mas, no de paxa ni çebada porque es muy dura de digestión.
- V. Mas duro es vn garróte y suele ablandár las costillas a vn vellaco.
- M. Bien está no passe mas adelante señora Huéspedada quanto pónen de aquí a la çudad?
- V. Señor çinco leguas.
- M. Podrémos los caminá de a quia la noche?
- V. Como picáren?

\* Peralvillo,  
a mount in  
Spaine where  
they shoote  
malefactors to  
death.

\* i. That arrow  
which hitteth  
on the hart.

- P. What shall we have to dinner?
- H. There are conies, there are partridges, there are chickens, hennes, geese, ducks, there is mutton, there is beefe, kid, and hogs inward.
- P. Well saide I, that in your house there could not want hogs flesh.
- H. Nor in your house shall there want a kyne while you are within.
- P. No in truth mistress, but they told me that a while agoe you and cleanlines had been at bate.
- H. And they told me, that you had banished shamefastnes from your house.
- M. I am glad Peter that thou hast mette with that thou haddest need of.
- A. And also she hath need of me.
- H. I have neede of him truly, if it be but to put him in \* Peralvillo to shoote twelve arrowes at him with the \* mistress, I know not for what els?
- P. Now mistress, let vs saie no more, holde your peace and let vs be still, for we have a quip a peece.
- H. Go to, make an end babbler in graine, & demand that you have need of.
- P. Give me haie, and straw, and prouender for the mules.
- H. How much will you have?
- P. Two sienes full of haie, and a pecke of barley.
- H. It is very little for three beastes.
- P. Heere are no more then two, which is the other?
- H. The other are you, and more deuouring then the other two.
- P. If I be more, it is not of straw nor barley, for it is very hard of digestion.
- H. Harder is a cudgell, and yet it vseth to soften the ribs of a kyne.
- M. It is well, passe no further forward mistressesse hostesse, how far doe they count it from hence to the citie?
- H. Sir five leagues.
- M. May we ride them betwixt this and night?
- H. As you shal haften.

M. Ay

M. Is



*Diálogos.*

- M. Ay algun río en el camino o algun mal passo?
- V. Por do quiera, ay vna legua de mal camino.
- M. Ay adonde herrár?
- V. El camino no señór, las mulas si señór, vuestras merçedes mil partes ay donde pueden herrár.
- M. \* Si son los yerros por amores, dignos son de perdonár.
- A. Señora huéspedea cuya es ésta venta?
- V. De vn cavallero de la çiudad.
- A. Quanto pagan por ella de arrendamiento en vn año?
- V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.
- M. De essa suerte, buena maña se an menester dar a hurtár para sacár la costa.
- P. Essa no falta, el gato por liebre, la carne de mula por váca, el vino pasádo por água todo va de ésta manera.
- V. \* Mala pasqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal san Iuán. quando ha visto el, esso en mi venta?
- P. Visto lo no, gustádo lo si.
- V. Vos mentís como velláco, que nuncatal.
- P. \* Aora estémós a quenta huéspedea no demos de comer a el Diabolo, venga acá no se actuerda el otro día quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le diesse un pedáço de carne de aquello que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía pasádo por aquí, porque dezía que le avía savido muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquíto, díxo caro nos costaría, si cada dia se nos avía de morir un Roçín.
- V. Es Verdád que aquello fue aquel Roçín que se nos murió, però estava tan gódo y tan lindo que éra mejor que carne de váca.
- M. Señora huéspedea aunque mas lindo sea, no nos dee de el agóra.
- V. No Señór que ya se acabó, hasta aora avia de durár?

M. Vea-

*Dialogues.*

35

- M. *Is there any river in the way, or any evil passage?*
- H. *Which way soever you goe, there is a league of evil waie.*
- M. *Is there any place \* herrár?*
- H. *The way, no Sir, the mules, yes Sir, a thousand passages where you may erre.*
- M. *If they be errors for love, they are worthy to be pardoned.*
- A. *Mistresse hostesse, whose is this inne?*
- H. *Gentlemen of the citie.*
- A. *How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeere?*
- H. *More then it is woorth, five hundred ducats.*
- M. *By this meanes they had neede good skill to steale to get out their charge.*
- P. *That skill wants not, a cat for hare flesh, the flesh of a mulc for beefe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.*
- H. *God send the knave an ill Easter, and an ill Midsummer, when have you seene this in my Inne?*
- P. *I have not seene, but I have tasted it?*
- H. *You lie like a knave, there was never any such matter.*
- P. *Hostesse we are upon the reckoning now, \* let vs not give the dinell his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I came this way with a gentleman which requested you to give him a peece of meate, of that you had given him the other day before, when he passed this waie, because he said it liked his taste very well, the which the little child hearing, saide, it would be deere flesh unto vs, if every day there should be a nagge.*
- H. *It is true, that there was a nagge which died, but hee was so fat and so faire, that hee was better then beefe.*
- M. *Mistres hostesse, although he might be more fine, give vs not of that now.*
- H. *No sir, for he is already made an end of, what think you it could last til now?*

\* To misse or erre. Also to shooe a horse or mule.

\* Let vs not braule and fall out, and so go to law upon words and so make the dinell dine.

M. Let

M. Veámos el vino que tal es.  
 V. El vino es tal, que bástala a llevar al cielo a el, que acostumbra a beverlo.  
 P. Ola nuestra ama no basta ventura si no eréje?  
 V. Lo que yo digo es verdad y lo provaré que el buen vino, lleva los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. De que manera?  
 V. El buen vino cria buena sangre, la buena sangre engendra buena condición, la buena condición para buenas obras, las buenas obras, llevan a los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. Ella ha aprobado su yntención bastante.  
 A. Pero no se podrá dezir esto por este vino.  
 V. Por que?  
 A. \* Por que esto mas parece vinagre y agua.  
 V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echó el de lo alto.  
 M. Pues Dios no le vino a echar agua, que sin agua lo crió.  
 P. Bien, no está v.m. en el quento, el de lo alto es su marido, que está en lo alto de la casa, y desde allí, échala agua en el vino, por una cebratana.  
 A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que fabéys de cuenta.  
 M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.  
 A. En todas las cosas ay engaño.  
 P. Sino es en la ropa vieja.  
 V. Por cierto que tienen razón, que está ya el mundo muy perdido, por esso nos hemos recogido mi marido y yo a esta venta, por acabar en buena vida.  
 M. Esta llamáys buena vida huésped?  
 P. Si Señor, que peor era la de los de Sodoma y Gomorra.  
 V. No le parece a v.m. que es buena vida estar hechos hermitaños en este deserto, que mas hicieron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

M. Let us see the wine that is so good.  
 H. The wine is such, that it is sufficient to bring a man to heauen that shall use to drinke it.  
 P. What now Mistresse, is it not ynough to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?  
 H. That which I say is true, and I will prooue it, that good wine carrieth men vp to heauen.  
 M. How so?  
 H. Good wine makes good blood, good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth ende in good works, good works carrie men to heauen.  
 M. She hath prooued her intent very sufficiently.  
 A. But this cannot bee verifed in this wine.  
 H. Why?  
 A. Because this seemes rather vinegar and water.  
 H. Water, by the life of my soule, it hath no more water in it, then he from aboue put in it.  
 M. God neuer came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.  
 P. Well, you vnderstand not the matter a right. He from aboue is his husband, which is in the top of the house, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long tunnell.  
 A. I will die and liue with thee Peter, for thou knowest fashions.  
 M. I vnderstoode that she had called God, him that was from aboue.  
 A. In euery thing there is deceit.  
 P. Except it be in an old garment.  
 H. Truly they haue reason, for the world is very badde, for this cause haue my husband and I withdrawn our selues into this Inne to make an end in good life.  
 M. Call you this a good life hostesse?  
 P. Tea sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was worse.  
 H. Do you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermites in this desert, what did the fathers in the wilderness more then this?

P. And

*Diálogos.*

*Dialogues.*

37

- P. Y tan virtuosos, que de limosna, a quantos pasan les quitan lo que llévan.
- V. Quitár, nunca Dios tal quiera, recibir lo que nos dan con cortesía, esso si.
- P. Es el caso, que llaman cortesía a la gançua, con que abren las viçças.
- V. El diablo truxo a este moço a mi casa, vete con todos los diábolos, espíritu de contradición.
- P. ✱ Mal me quieren mis comadres, por que les digo las verdades.
- M. Aóra Pedro, haze quenta con la huéspedea, y vamos de aquí, que es tarde.
- P. Que se deve de todo huéspedea?
- V. Elpérese, contraré, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de çebada, çinco de vino, vno de carne y dos de toçino, veynte reales entodo.
- P. ✱ Quenta hecha, mula muerta, escudero vos a pie, pues a mi me quiere dar papilla señóra huéspedea, ✱ no fave, que quando ella naçió, ya yo comía pan con cortçça: elpere haré yo la mia.
- V. Haze, veámos.
- P. ✱ Tres y dos son çinco, dos de blanco y tres de tinto, y otros tres de estópas y pez, vno de la olla y dos de la çolla, y medio de la çebolla, ocho son en todos.
- V. Malos años para vos, págame aquí, si no, por el siglo de mi padre que os arañe ésta cara.
- P. ✱ Quitádo se ha el gáto la rópa de la ypocrasía, señóra hermitaña, tenga paciència y no tanta codícia.
- V. ✱ No me quente mortuorios, si no paguéme, si no, las bárbas le facaré vna a vna.
- M. Dale, lo que pidere, la huéspedea Pedro no riñas con ella.
- P. En vna não cargáda de plata, no ay háрто para contentarla.
- V. No pído si no lo justo, paga me hermano

- P. *And so holie that of pure almes, of, as many as passe they take away that they carie.*
- H. *Take away, God forbid, receiue that they giue vs with cartesie that we doe.*
- P. *Thus it is, they call the picklocke cartesie, with which they open the mailes.*
- M. *The diuell brought this seruant to my house, get thee hence in the diuels name, thou spirit of contradiction.*
- P. *My gossip cannot abide me, because I speake truth vnto them truely.*
- M. *Now Peter reckon with the hostesse and let vs begon hence, for it is late.*
- P. *Hostesse what is owing in the whole?*
- H. *Tarie I little. I will reckon, two of straw, and of straw two, three of barley, fine of wine, one of flesh, and two of bacon, ten shillings in the whole.*
- P. *The reckoning made, the mule dead, seruing man got your way a foote why the mistresse hostesse will giue me pap, doth she not knowe, that when she was borne, then did I eat bread with hard crust, tarrie ile make my reckoning.*
- H. *Make it, let vs see.*
- P. *Three and two are fine, two of sacke & three of wine somewhat blacke, and other three of the burdes of flaxe and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the \*nowle, and a halfe of the chibbowle, they are eight in the whole.*
- H. *What with a mischiefe to you, paie mee beere; if not, by my fathers soule ile put out thine eies.*
- P. *The cat hath cast off the \*garment of hypocrisie, mistris Hermite haue patience, and be not so conetous.*
- H. *Do not reckon vp mortuaries vnto me, but paie me, if not I will pull off the haire of thy beard one by one.*
- M. *Giue that which the Hostesse doth require Peter & braul not with hir.*
- P. *In a ship loaden with siluer there is not enough to content hir.*
- H. *I require nothing but my right, pay me*

\* The hinder part of the head

\* The cat faining hir false a Hermite, put on a Hermits weed and many beasts and creatures came to hir for chrestly counsell, at last came the mice, which slong off the garment and to them.

\* All in one  
song.

- P. Anfi dize la picáza, tome señóra ve  
ay dóze reales, los seis son de  
buéno, y los seis de mal prové-  
cho le hágan.
- V. Mas no, si no los seis, son de bien ve-  
nidos léan, y los seis de en óra  
mala váys.
- P. \* Maldiciones de putas viejas, ora-  
ciones son de salud.
- M. Quéde se con Dios Señóra huéspeda.
- V. El váya con vuestras merçédes, a-  
qui está ésta pobre posáda pa-  
ra todas las vézes que viniéren  
este camino, les suplico se sirvan  
della.
- P. \* Sobre buen haz de pája tía.
- V. No, sino por sus ojos bellidos lo ha-  
rán.
- P. Quede con dios tía, y el la hága bue-  
na hermitaña.
- V. Anda con dios hijo, y el os hága me-  
jór de lo que soys.

\* i, Their mo-  
ney.

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, lla-  
mados el uno Iuan, el otro Francisco, el  
otro Guzman, en el qual se contienen,  
*las ordinarias pláticas que los pájes  
suelen tener unos  
con otros.*

- I. D E donde vienes Francisco?
- F. De la corte Iuan.
- I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?
- F. El rollo se está adonde solía, el Rey  
ha mandádo que quien tuviere  
que comer, que come, y el otro  
que ayúne.
- I. Viste a la Réyna?
- F. Ala de diamantes con que hize el  
postrer flux.
- I. Luego jugado has?
- F. Yo no, mis dineros jugaron al tro-  
cádo, y trocaron me por otro  
dueño.
- I. Ganaste o perdiste?

F. Gané

brother and leaue of words.

- P. So saith the \* chattering Pie, holde mi-  
stres, see heere sixe shillings, three  
of them be much good doe it you  
with them, and the other three the  
diuell choake you with them.
- H. Not so, but the one three are of wel-  
come vnto me, and the other three  
the diuell go with thee.
- P. Cursinges of old whoores are praiers of  
health.
- M. God be with you mistres Hostesse.
- H. God conduct your worships, heere is this  
poore Inne, for as often as you shall  
come this way, I entreate you to  
use it at your command.
- P. \* Aunt you do it vpon a good sheafe of  
strawe.
- H. No, but onely for your faire lookes sir.
- P. Aunt God be with you, and make you a  
good hermite.
- H. Farewell sonne, and God make thee bet-  
ter then that thou art.

The fift Dialogue betweene three Pages,  
called the one of them Iohn, the other  
Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are  
contained the ordinarie speeches  
which pages are wont to haue  
one with the other.

- I. From whence come you Frances?
- F. From the court Iohn.
- I. What is the newes there?
- F. The gallowes is where it was wont to be,  
the king hath commanded that hee  
that hath any thing to dinner, that  
he eate it, and he that hath not that  
he fast.
- I. Haue you seene the Queene?
- F. The Queene of Diamonds with which  
I made the last flush.
- I. Hast thou now bene at gaming?
- F. Not I, my money plaied at exchange, and  
changed me for another master.
- I. Hast thou won or lost?

F. I



*Diálogos.*

- F. Gané y perdí.  
 I. Como pudo sér?  
 F. Perdí mis dineros, y gané escarmiento para no jugar mas.  
 I. No sería pérdida la del dinero, si tu llevases adelante esse propósito, pero yo digo, que quien hizo, hará.  
 F. A lo menos mientras me durare el Escózor, no jugaré mas.  
 I. Esse no te duraré mas que hasta llegar de aquí a tu casa, o hasta que tengas mas dineros.  
 F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero, tengo de comprar casas, o viñas con ello.  
 I. Para embiár a tus parientes, o para luzírte con ello.  
 F. Luzírme o que? malos años, Luzígame el puto de mi amo pues se sirve de mí.  
 I. Pues pienzas que te ha de durár tu amo toda la vida?  
 F. Dure lo que duráre, como cuchar de pan, que quando éste me falte, no faltará otro tan ruyn como el.  
 I. Y quando seas grande?  
 F. Estonces ya sabémos el paradero de los pajes, o ala guerra, o a un monasterio, o a la horca.  
 I. Esso postero lo le renuncio en tí.  
 F. Pues pensáis vos esca páros por ypócrita?  
 I. Hermáno, en mi lináje nunca úvo ningun ahorcado, no quiero estrenarlo yo.  
 F. Estrenada os darán la foga, no os pensays por esso.  
 I. Piená el ladrón que todós son de su condición, yo hermano no piénsó hazér obras por donde la merezca.  
 F. Pues no as oydo dezír, que el pensár no es sabér, esso sin pensár se verná antes que vn colongía.  
 I. Yo bien c réo, que si yo trato mucho contigo, que tu me procurerás pegár la tiña, porque vn puerco

*Dialogues.*

39

- F. *I have woon and I have lost.*  
 I. *How could that be?*  
 F. *I lost my money, and got a warning to play no more.*  
 I. *The losse of money should be no losse, if thou didst go forward in this purpose, but I say, that he that hath once plaied will play againe.*  
 F. *At the least, while the smarting shall last I will play no more.*  
 I. *That will not last with thee longer, then till thou comest home, or untill thou hast more money.*  
 F. *What should I doe with money, am I to buy houses or vinyards with it?*  
 I. *To send it to thy friends and kinred, or to make thy selfe trim with it.*  
 F. *To make my selfe trim? a plague take it, let the buggerer my master trim me seeing he serves himselfe of me.*  
 I. *Why thinkest thou thy master is to live with thee for euer?*  
 F. *Let him last as long as a spoone of bread, when he is wanting to me, there will not faile another as bad as hee.*  
 I. *And when thou art better grown in yeeres?*  
 F. *Then we know the end of Pages, either to the warre, or to a monasterie, or to the gallowes.*  
 I. *This last I leave to thee.*  
 F. *Why thinke you to scape because you are an Hypocrite?*  
 I. *Brother, in my kinred neuer was there any hanged, I will not hanfell the gallowes.*  
 F. *They will giue you a halter for hanfell, take you no care for that.*  
 I. *Well thinke the theefe, that all are as himselfe, I brother do not thinke to doe any thing that I may deserve the gallowes.*  
 F. *But hast thou not heard saie, that opinion is no knowledge, this without thinking will come sooner then a canonship.*  
 I. *I well beleene, that if I deale much with thee, thou wilt infect me with mangines, for one hog that hath wallowed*

puerco encenagado, siempre procura encenagar a otro.

F. Dizes verdad, que si el ladrón anda con el hermitaño, o el ladrón será hermitaño, o el hermitaño ladrón, pero tu nunca juegas?

I. Yo no en mi vida.

F. Pues tente bien no cáygas, porque a fee que si cáes, que as de ser como los borrachos que comiencan tarde a ser lo, que por es quitarse de lo que han dexado de bever, nunca salen de cueros.

I. Si Dios me guarde mi júyzio, yo me guardaré desse vicio.

F. Mas fuerte era Tróya, y fue destruyda.

I. Dexémos esto agora, y dime como te va con tu amo?

F. A mi muy bien, porque como es moço, galán, y enamorado, son tres cosas que sacan de harón al mas cuerdo, y así todo se nos va en fiestas, una librea oy, otra mañana, siempre en farás, músicas, y danças, siempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña vino, si era tan bien tratado como nosotros.

I. Si pero a fee que créo, que tras buen bocado, dais buen grito.

F. Porque dizes esto?

I. Porque me parece que si vuestro amo dança de la manera, vosotros no avéys d'estar ociosos, sino que avéys de çapatear, porque en casa del músico, todos los criados son dançantes.

F. Es verdad que esto a cofadillos, nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, pero con el buen pesebre, todo se passa y no como tu que estás serviendo a vn pelón, que te deve matar de hambre.

I. No mata, porque yo nunca tuve vida, despues que estoy con el.

F. No tiene buen ordinario?

I. La

wallowed in the mire will beray another.

F. Thou sayest true, for if a theefe keepe companie with a hermit, either a theefe shall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but dost thou neuer play?

I. I, neuer in my life.

F. Then hold fast, fall not, for in faith if thou fallest, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length so to be, which to quit themselves of that they have left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkenness.

I. If God keepe me in my right minde, I will keepe my selfe from this vice.

F. Troy was more strong, and yet was overcome.

I. Let us leaue this now, and tell me how your master and you agree?

F. I like very well of him, for he is young, gallant, and in love, they are three things which busie the wisest man, & so we are altogether in feasting, one livery to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, musicke, daunces, and banquets, that the dinell take Lançarote when he came from Brittain if he were so well entreated as we are.

I. Yea, but in faith I beleene that after a good morsell, you paie well for it.

F. Why saiest thou so?

I. For I thinke, that if your master daunce in such sort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foote it too, for in a musitions house all the servants are dauncers.

F. It is true, that by reason of this love small occasions drine vs in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the street, but with good fare we passe over all this, and not as thou dost which seruest a miserable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.

I. He kils me not, for I neuer had life since I came to him.

F. Hath he not a good ordinarie table?

I. Wretched.

*Diálogos.*

- I. La lazéria es ordinaria en cása.
- F. Que os da a comer?
- I. Esperanças y folías.
- F. Con ésslo estás tan gordo?
- I. De los Tevillos si estoy.
- F. Dalle cantonáda.
- I. Temo de encontrár otro peór, y no querria por huýr de la llama dár en las bráfas.
- F. Haz te cuchillo de melonéro, provár muchos hasta hallár uno buéno.
- I. Luégo cobra hombre mala fama, y le \* dízen Piedra movediza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.
- F. No sino dexáos secár como palo en famentéra.
- I. Adonde vastu agóra?
- F. A buscár mi ámo, y témo que no le tengo de poder hallár.
- I. Adonde le perdiste?
- F. Yo no le perdí, el se perdió muchas dias ha.
- I. Ansi yrá un perdido a buscár otro perdido, como un duelo búfca otro duelo, y una necesidad a otra, porque *Pares cum paribus facillime congregantur.*
- F. Bendito sea Dios, que portres blancas de gramática que studio, ya no se cabe en el cuérpo, y no vée la ora que desembuchár lo.
- I. Digo hermano que cada obéja con su paréja, y vn semijante busca a otro.
- F. Ansi tu ámo como es miserable pelón, busca vn ypócrita como tu, a quien con dezille que es menestér ayunár para yr al cielo, te tiene en dicta perpétua, y canoniza por virtud, lo que es miséria fina.
- I. Notienes razón, que el no es avariénto, però como dízen Pobreza no es vileza.
- F. No, mas es maestra que enseña como se ha de hazér.
- I. Yo se, que si mi ámo tuviére la rénta del

*Dialogues.*

41

- I. *Wretchednesse it selfe is his ordinarie promise in house.*
- F. *What diet doth he give you?*
- I. *Hopes and songs.*
- F. *And with this art thou so fat?*
- I. *If I be fat, it is in my anke bones.*
- F. *Run away from him.*
- I. *I am afraid to meete with a woorse, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.*
- F. *Make of thy selfe a knife to cut pumpions, prooue many until you finde one good.*
- I. *Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they say a rolling stone gathereth no mosse, and every one iustleth him a side.*
- F. *No but suffer your selfe to drie as stickes on a pile or heape.*
- I. *Whither goest thou now?*
- F. *To seeke my master, and I feare that I shall not finde him.*
- I. *Where didst thou lose him?*
- F. *I lost him not, he lost himselfe a great while agoe.*
- I. *So one that is lost himselfe, goeth to seeke another that is lost, as one greefe seekes another greefe, and one folly another: for like will to like.*
- F. *God be blessed, that for \* three blanches \* A blanke of Grammar which he hath studie halfe a Mara- died, now he cannot keepe it in his vedi, a Mara- belly, and he thinks everie bower vedi 34 of them to fixe minde. pence.*
- I. *I say brother, everie sheepe with his equall, and like will to like.*
- F. *So thy master as he is a miserable wretch seeks out an hypocrite like thy selfe, and by telling thee how requisite it is to fast for the winning of beaven doth holde thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miserableness.*
- I. *Thou saie not well, for he is not couctous, but as it is saide, Pouertie is not vileness.*
- F. *No, but it is a mistress which doth teach vs how we should become niggardly.*
- I. *I know, if my master had remeines as thy master*

del tuyo que gastára mas que el, lo qual el nos dize que hará muy complidaménte si dios le mejóra d'estado.

F. De manera que éssas son las esperanças que coméis.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la vèja que mojáva el sarniénto en el río y le chupáva.

F. Con éssa comida no dubdo dexéis de salir buénos girifáltes al cabo del año.

\* i. With this diet you may be light enough to flye.

I. Si però, si bolamos tan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que se sustentan de semejante manjár.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tiéne tu ámo?

I. Yote lo diré vn quento de mentiras, y otro de neccesidades, y vn millón de neccedades, y todo ésto se gasta cada año, de suerte, que viéne a salir a rata por cantidad.

F. Quantos cavállos tiene?

I. Dize que cinco con quatro que se le an muerto.

F. Quantos criados?

I. Nónes son, y no llégan a tres.

F. De suerte que tu sólo le sirves.

\* i. In going up and downe shifting for my self, and not living on my master.

I. Y aun me podrían açotár por vagamúndo.

F. Pues como siendo sólo, no tiénes mucho en que entender.

I. Si tengo, en contar lástimas y calamidades.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

\* i. of hunger.

I. Que muéro con el muchos dias ha.

F. Hernáno hermano, quien si mude Dios le ayude.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no áre, por donde quiera veo cien leguas de mal camino.

F. Aquí viéne Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

\* i. Stands built upon the sea, the sea compassing it round about.

G. Muchas cosas, el Turco (dizen que) se ha tornado Moro, que Venécia nada en agua, y que Ytalia está llena de hombres, que en Frán-

master hath, that hee would spend more then he doth, which hee telleth vs he will performe with the best, if it please God to better his estate.

F. So then these be the hopes which you feede on.

I. It is better then water, as the olde woman saide, which dipped a dry stick in the river and sucked it.

F. With this diet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may prooue good \* Gersalcons to flye.

I. Yea but if we flye so high, the winde will carrie vs away, as it doth all those which do feede on such diet.

F. By the life of thy mother, what reuenewe hath thy master?

I. I will tell thee, a thousand thousandes of lies, and another of needs, a million of fooleries, and all this is spent euery yeere in such sort, that hee spends as much as comes in to him.

F. How many horses hath he?

I. He saith five, with those fower which are dead.

F. How many servants?

I. They are odde, and yet they mount not to three.

F. So then thou alone seruest him.

I. \* And yet might they whip me for a vagabond.

F. How so, seeing thou art alone thou hast not much to imploy thy selfe on.

I. But I haue much to do to reckon greifes and calamities.

F. How long hast thou liued with him?

I. I haue been \* dying with him long since.

F. Brother, brother, God wil him helpe, that seekes for it himselfe.

I. Yea, but where shall the ox goe that he shall not labour, which way soeuer I see a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Heere comes little Guzman, let vs see what newes hee brings. Hoe Guzman what newes?

G. Many things, the Turke (as they say) is become a Moore or infidell, \* Venice swims in water, & Italie is full of people, and that in France there



*Diálogos.*

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien se dize de secreto que el conde de Flandes a dormido con la Reyna de España.

- F. Todo esso ay de nuevo?  
 G. Agora viniéron con este correo éstas nuévas.  
 F. De luengas vías luengas mentiras fuelen venir.  
 G. Lo que yo os he dicho, todo estan verdad, como ser aora de día.  
 F. Luego grandes guerras se aparéjan este veráno.  
 G. Los pronósticos dizen, qu'este veráno los que biviéren, verán grandes maravillas.  
 F. Que maravillas serán, cuenta nos las.  
 G. Dizen que el sol será mayor que toda la tierra.  
 F. Santo Dios, y esso ha de sér verdad?  
 G. Y que la luna cada noche aparéce de su manera, que las estrellas sino fuéssé por el sol no ternán resplandór ninguno, que los ríos corren a la mar, que arderán muchos montes, que avrá grande mortandád de todo género de ganados, y en todas las ciudádas avrá unos mónstruos que echarán llamas por la boca, y los hombres que no comiéron lo que éstos vomitáren, morirán.  
 F. Valame Dios, yo pienso que todo esso es mentira.  
 G. Los Pronósticos dizen, que el sol y la luna faltarán, antes que todas éstas cosas fálten.  
 F. Dessa manera, todos los hombres morirán, porque quien ha de comér lo que vomitáren los monstros?  
 G. Pues as tu comido vn asno entéro, y no comerás de aquello?  
 F. Si yo soy asno, vos soys mula.  
 G. Xo que te estriégo que lárgas le nacieron a v.m.  
 F. Tan lárgas como sus narizes.  
 G. Va a véra tu tía Hermáno?  
 F. No que ya ví a tu madre, en la pel-lejería.

*Dialogues.*

43

there are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, and also they say in secret, that the \* Earle of Flaunders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine.

\* The king of Spaine in his title Earle of Flaunders.

- F. Is there all this newes?  
 G. These newes came now with this poste.  
 F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.  
 G. That which I have told you is as true as it is now day light.  
 F. Then great warres are like to bee this sommer.  
 G. The Prognostications say, those that shall live this sommer shall see great woonders.  
 F. What shall those woonders be, I pray thee tell them vs.  
 G. They say the sun shall be bigger then all the earth.  
 F. Blessed God, and will this prooue true?  
 G. And that the moone every night doth appeere after hir old fashion, that the \* starres if it were not for the sunne, should have no light, that all \* mount-  
 \* rivers run into the sea, that manie \* mountains shall burne, that there shall be a great slaughter of all kind of \* cattell, and in all cities there shall be monsters which shall cast \* out fire at the mouth, and those men which shall not eat that which these monsters shall vomite, they die.  
 F. God helpe me, I thinke al this to be a lie.  
 G. The Prognostications say that the sun and the moone shall faile of their courses rather then these thinges to faile.  
 F. By this meanes, all men shall die, for who can eat that which these monsters shall vomit?  
 G. Why hast thou swallowed downe an \* asse whole, and wilt not eat of it?  
 F. If I be an asse thou art a mule.  
 G. \* Ho I do rub thee, for they are sprung up verie \* long to your worship.  
 F. So long as your nose.  
 G. Go you to see your aunt brother?  
 F. Not so, for I saw thy mother in a brothel house.

\* i. Starres receive their light of the sunne.  
 \* As mount Aetna in Sicily and others which continually cast out fire and brimstone, &c.  
 \* For mans meate to eat.  
 \* i. Ouens wherein they bake breade.

\* Made a gull.  
 \* Hoc, a voice that carters use to make their horses stand still.  
 \* i. Long eares, calling him thereby asse.  
 \* Calling of him by this a lewe, which for the most part have long noses.

lejería.

- \* Ha <sup>Grate me,</sup> Ral- G. \* Harrallame esse quéfo.  
lame, then it is F. Harrallame esse afno.  
Grate me, and G. Toda la vida has de comer sin pláto?  
Harra allí  
then it is haight  
that way as one  
saith to an  
asse.
- F. Toda la vida has de comer tu cabrón?  
G. O Dios te bendiga la bella alimaña.  
F. O Dios te despache déste mundo para el otro.  
G. Dízen me que es v.m. gran comedor de huevos asfados.  
F. Tambien me han dicho a mi que v.m. come muy bien bacalao.  
G. O si todos los áfños truxéran albárdas, que buen oficio era el, de los albardéros.  
F. Si esso fuere así, vna mas tenía de costa vuestro ámo cada més.  
G. Si del nécio se uviéra de pagar alcavála, quanto ganáran los Alcavaléros con v.m?  
F. En éssa hazienda nádie podria tratar, porque dizque es patrimonio de v.m.  
G. Todo es de vn pedáço v.m.  
F. Si, però es de aguijón para picár a v.m.  
G. Mas no créo que es fino de atun de yjada.  
F. Si de atun fuéra ya v.m. uviéra arremetido a la pieça, como el afno a la cevada.  
G. Parece me hermano que aunque tu entráste en la corte, nunca la corte entró en ti.  
F. En la de los puércos concédo, porque como es tu jurisdicción, no se háze en ella, sino lo que tu ordenas.  
G. Por vida tuya que me digas, quantos cursos tienes de nécio.  
F. Los misinos que vos de majadéro.  
G. Yo pienso, que éras ya doctór en ynfenfato.  
F. Y vos estáys graduado por cavalleriza.  
G. A Dios hermano, y roe bien éssos grançones.

F. Y

house.

- G. Grate me this cheefe.  
F. Haight that way this asse.  
G. What art thou to eat thy meate all thy life without a platter?  
F. Art thou to eat all thy life of goates flesh?  
G. O God blesse thee faire beast.  
F. O God rid thee out of this world into the other.  
G. They tell me that you are a great eater of hard egges.  
F. Also they tell mee that you eat verie well poore lohn.  
G. O if all asses should carrie pack-saddles, what a good trade should the pack-sadler haue.  
F. If it were so, your master should be at the charge of one packe-saddle more euery moneth.  
G. If there should be subsidie gathered up of euery foole, how much would the gatherers of the subsidies put into their purse with your worship?  
F. In this goods none could meddle, because it is saide it is your patrimonie.  
G. All your worship is one peece.  
F. Yea, but it is a pricke to spurre you forward.  
G. But I beleue it not but that is a peece of a Tunnie fish of the bellie side.  
F. If it were of a Tunnie fish you had set vpon a peece of it as greedilie as an asse on the prouender.  
G. It seemes to me brother, although thou entredst into the court, the court neuer entred vnto thee.  
F. In that of hogs I graunt, for as it is thy iurisdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thou doest appoint.  
G. I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole hast thou?  
F. As many as thou hast of a ioulthead.  
G. I thinke thou wast doctör in sencelesse-nes.  
F. And you taken degree in the stable.  
G. Farewell brother, and gnaw well these bukes.

F. And

*Diálogos.*

F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón efótro.

I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amigo.

F. Amígo lerá el de v'na taça de vino.

I. E'íte es de los que aconsejáva el ósfo, que hizicfemos poco caso.

F. Como es esse quento?

I. Quenta yfópo, que vna vez dos amígos ván camíno a pie, por vn monte, y falió a ellos vn ósfo, el vno echando mano a su espada, se quífo defendér a sí y a su compañéro, al qual dixo que hizicfse lo mífimo, para que ni el vno ni el ótro muricfssen, el compañéro que tenía mas cuenta con su fálud, que con el del ótro, a trevió-se ántes a sus pies, que a sus má-nos, y no curando del compañé-ro, dio a huyr a vn árbol álto que allí vido, y se subió en el, donde estuvo segúro del peligro. El compañéro visto que el fóló no se podía defendérse del ósfo, se dexó caer en tierra haziendo mué-ftras de que estáva muerto, tenía el huefgo y no refolláva mi-éntras el ósfo llegó y le olió to-do, las narizes y la boca, y los oy-dos, y pensando que estáva mu-érto, se fue de allí, sin hazérle nin-gun daño. El que estáva en el árbol, visto que el ósfo era ydo, baxó del, y pregunto a su com-pañéro, que era aquello que el ósfo le avía dicho al oydo: El otro respondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos, nunca hizicfse camíno otra vez.

F. Respondió muy discretamente, y si yo lo supiera ántes, uviera le contado esse quento a estotro mierda en palillo, que piensa que fabe mas que Bártulo ni Baldo.

I. Por cierto el túvo demasiada razón, amotejarte de nécio pues estu-víste

*Dialogues.*

45

F. And bronse you as a good he-goat these others.

I. By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good passe.

F. He will rather prooue a friend to a cup of wine.

I. This is such a friend that the beare counsell'd that we should make but little reckoning of.

F. How is that tale?

I. Aslope tells, that on a time two friends travelled a foote together, and going by a wood, a beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his sword meant to defend himselfe, and his companion whom he willed that he should doe the like, that neither one of them nor the other might not miscarrie; his companion which made more account of his owne safetie then his fellows, was more bolde upon his feete then upon his hands, and not respecting his fellow, betooke himselfe to fly to a high tree which there he sawe, and climed up the same, where he was safe from the danger. His companion seeing that alone he could not defend himselfe from the beare, cast himselfe downe on the ground, making shewes that he was dead, he held his breath, and did not once blome while the beare came and smelt him round, his nose and his mouth, and his eares, thinking he had been dead went his way, without doing him any harme. He that was in the tree, seeing that the beare was gone, came downe the tree, and asked his fellow what was that that the beare had told him in his eare: The other answered, he told me that with such bad companions as your selfe I never shoulde travell againe.

F. He answered verie well, and if I had knowne it before, I would haue told this tale to this surd upon a sticke, which thinks hee knowes more then Bartulus or Baldus.

I. Truly hee had to too much cause to scoffe at thee for a foole, seeing thou



viste tan torpe que no entendiste sus pronósticos y adivinanzas.

F. Pues tu entiendes las mejor?

I. Yo entiendo las como el las dixo.

F. Pues yo bien créo que entiendo Romance, y el en Romance hablaba que no en algaravía.

I. Pues quieres vér como debáxo del sayal ayal: y que aun que te habló en español, es algaravía de allende para ti.

F. Yalo desseo vér como es.

I. Pues lo priméro que dixo que el Turco se ha tornádo móro, es lo el de profesión y de ley, y suelo siempre: todos siguen la feta de Mahóna. Que Venécia náda en águá, es verdád que está fundada en la már, que Ytalia está lléna de hombres, tambien es verdád como Ynglatiérra lo está, Tambien que en Fráncia, ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo sábe que quando el Rey quie-ra, podrá facár della mas de dozientos mil.

F. Todo ésto bien lo entiendo yo, pero lo de más, como se puede entender, que el conde de Flandesaya dormido con la Récyna despaña y no se anda el mundo en guerras.

I. Pues bobo no sábes tu, que el conde de flandes y el rey despaña es todo una própria persona.

F. Iuro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avía yo caydo en ello.

I. Pues lo demas que díze que el sol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdád, segun demonstraciones astrológicas, que yo con fabér poco te las pudiéra dár a entender, si uviéra lugar. Que la luna aparecerá cada noche de su manera, ésto tu lo véés cada día con sus crescientes y menguantes, nunca está una noche, como estúvo otra: pues que arderán muchos montes, tambien es verdád, que ay en el mundo muchos que

thou wert so dull that thou understoodst not his prognostications and diuinings.

F. Doest thou then understand them better?

I. I understand them as he spake them?

F. But I beleue well that I understand Spanish, and he spake in Spanish and not in the Moores toong.

I. But wilt thou see, how under course attire is some wisdom, & although he spake Spanish it is the Moores toong to thee.

F. I desire to see how it is.

I. The first then that hee saide, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is so by his profession and law, and alwaies hath beene: all follow the sect of Mahomet. That Venice doth swim in water, it is true, for it is built in the sea: that Italy is full of men, also it is true as England is: also that in France are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the king will, hee may drawe out thereof more then two hundred thousand.

F. All this I understand well, but the rest how is it to be understood, that the earle of Flanders hath lien with the Queene of Spain, and the world not to be vp in armes.

I. Why foole dost not know, that the earle of Flanders and the king of Spaine is all one person.

F. I sweare by such a one, hee saith true that I did not light vpon.

I. But the rest, which he saith, that the sun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to astrological demonstrations, which I in knowing but a little coulde easlie make thee understand, if there were time and place, that the moone will appeere as it was wont, that thou seeist continually with hir waxing and waning, she is neuer one night as she was the other night, then that many mountaines shall burne, also it is true, for there be many



*Diálogos.*

que llaman Bolcánes, como el de Sicilia, que siempre está ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matár los hombres para comér.

F. Todo esso entiendo bien, però aquello de aquellos monstros, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puedo y pensar que sea.

I. Esso es mas fácil que esótro, porque aquellos monstros, son los hornos adó se cueze el pan, que échan llamas, y por la boca vomitan el pán que coménos.

F. Aora digo que tienes razón, y que yo estáva en bábia, y que puede vn necio con vna necedad forjada en su ymaginación dár en que entender a cien sabios.

I. Allí le a aconteció al poeta Oméro, que como con la vejez estuviése ciego y se anduviése passando por la orilla de la mar, y oyó hablar a ceirtos pescadores, que en aquel punto se estában espulgando, y come les preguntáse que pesca hazían, ellos entendiendo por los piojos, respondieron los que tenemos buscámos y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no viése lo que ellos hazían, y por esta causa no entendiése la Enigma, fue tanto lo que fatigó su ymaginación y entendimiento, por entender la y alcançar el secreto dello, que fue bastante ésta pesadumbre a hazer le morir.

F. El lo hizo no como sabio, sino como muy gran necio, en martarse por lo, que no podía alcançar.

I. Yo bien créó que no morirás tu defese acháque.

F. No hermano, que no páre ya mi madre, y yo contento me con lo que buenamente y sin mucho trabajo

*Dialogues.*

47

many in the world, as mount Aetna in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there shall bee a great slaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eate them.

F. All this I vnderstande well, but that of those monsters, which shall cast out flames out of their mouthes, and that we shall eate of that they shall vomite, I cannot thinke what it may be.

I. This is more easie then the other, for those monsters are ouens, where they bake bread which cast out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomiteth the bread which we eate.

F. Now I say you say true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his foolishnes framed in his owne imagination may gine to a hundred wise men matter to picke out.

I. So it happened to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde and went walking by the sea shoare, and heard certaine fishermen talking, that at that time were a lonsing themselves, & as he asked them, what fish they caught, they vnderstanding that he had meant their lice, they answered, those that we \* haue, we seeke for, \* i. Haue in their clothes, i. and those that we \* haue not we find, but as the good Homer, could not see lice. what they did, and for this cause \* i. Haue not in hand. could not vnderstand the riddle, it did so greene his vnderstanding to obtaine the secret of this matter, which was a sufficient greese to cause his death.

F. He did that not as a wise man, but as a very great foole, in casting awaie himselfe for that he could not reach vnto.

I. I well beleene thou wouldst not die for such a matter.

F. No brother, for my mother is past child bearing, and I content my selfe with that I may well and without much

trabajo puedo alcançár.

I. \* Pues quien no es mas de otro, no meréce mas que otro, y quien no fave no vále, y quien ruyn es en su villa, ruyn es en Sevilla, y quien adelante no mira atras se hálala.

F. Yo hermano, quiero andár por do anda el buey, y asentár el pic llano, no tomár de las cosas mas de aquello que me diéron, y porque quiero del mundo gozár, quiero oyr, y vér y callár.

Diálogo sexto, que passó entre dos amigos Yngléses y dos Españóles, que se juntaron en la lónja de Lóndres, en el qual se trátan muchas cosas curiosas, y de guísto, son los Yngléses Egidio y Guillermo, los Españóles Diego y Alónso.

E. **Q** Ve hazéis Guillermo?  
G. Ya lo veis Exidio.  
E. Como estáys tan ocioso?  
G. \* *Quia nemo me conduxit.*  
E. Pues yo os conbido aun ráto de buena converçación.  
G. Adónde?  
E. Venid os conmigo, no yréys adonde yo os lleváre?  
G. Si me lo dezís priméro, por que yr hombre, sin sáver adonde, sería neçedád.  
E. Luego no hazéis confíança de mí?  
G. Si hago, mas no sabéis que no todos los umóres son unos, y que podrá ser, lo que a vos os da guísto, enfadár me a mí.  
E. Si, però yo conózco ya vuestroumór, y me acomódo con el.  
G. Con todo ésto, dezídme adonde me lleváys.  
E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me están esperando dos amigos Españóles, muy discretos, gustaréis de su buena conversación.  
G. Háblan

*much labour reach unto.*

I. *But hee that is not more then another doth deserue no more then another, and hee that hath not knowledge, is of no worth, and he that in his owne towne is vile, and is also bad and naught in Seville, and he that looks not before he leape may fall into the ditch.*

F. *Brother, I wil go where the oxe hath troden, and set downe my foote softe and faire, not to take more matters then that they shall giue mee, and bicause I will liue in rest I will heare and see and hold my peace.*

*The sixth Dialogue which passed between two friends Englishmen, and two Spaniards, which met upon the Exchange in London: wherein are handled many curious matters, and delightful: the English men are named Giles and William, the Spaniardes James and Alonso.*

G. **W** Hat do you William?  
W. You euen see Giles.  
G. Why are you so idle?  
W. Bicause no man hath hired me.  
G. Then I inuite you for a while into good companie?  
W. Whither?  
G. Come with me, will you not go whither I shall leade you?  
W. If you tell me first, for it were follie for a man to go hee knowes not whither.  
G. Do you not now trust me?  
W. Yes I do trust you, but do you not knowe, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much displease me.  
G. Yea, but I know your humour, and I do applie my selfe vnto it.  
W. But for all this, tell me whither you carrie me.  
G. Let vs goe to the Exchange where two Spaniards very discrete men my friends are tarrying for me, you shall haue a taste of their good conuersation. W. Speake

*Diálogos.*

*Dialogues.*

49

- G. Háblanynglés?  
 E. Vn poquito, pero pues vos entendís bien el Español, y yo tambien no ymporta.  
 G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no sea, mas de por aprender algunas buenas frases Españólas.  
 E. Ellas sé yo que las tienen buenas, porque son de Tolédo donde es la prima de la lengua Española.  
 G. Son por ventura aquellos, que se andan allí paseando.  
 E. Los propios, vámos allá, Dios guarde a vuestras mercedes.  
 D. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.  
 E. Pásse adelante la conversación de que se tratava aora.  
 D. No parece fino que la entendistes, que respondistes a ella sin daros el pie.  
 A. Tratávamos de las salutations, que se usan en *Inglaterra*, y de las que se usan en España.  
 G. Quales son mejores?  
 A. Cierto en esto, adonde quiera, ay abusos, quando dize el español Dios os guarde, en ora buena estéis, Dios os de salud, y el Yngles buenas tardes y otras semejantes yo apruévola por buena salutación.  
 G. Pues el mundo la reprueba, y tienen por tóscos a los que la usan.  
 A. Yaun por esso se dize, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay mejor señal de que ello es bueno, de vér que el mundo lo reprueba.  
 G. De las demas salutations que os parece?  
 A. De las de mas digo, que quando el *Yngles* pregunta a el otro, como estáys, dize una gran necesidad, y quando el *Españól* dize besoos las manos, dize una gran mentira.  
 G. Menester es que déys razón, de vuestra nueva opinión.  
 A. Aora dezime por vuestra vida, no os parece neçedad a el que vos veys bueno preguntár le como está?  
 G. Teneys

- W. Speake they English?*  
*G. A very little, but seeing you understand well the Spanish and I also, it makes no matter.*  
*W. I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne some good Spanish phrases.*  
*G. Those I knowe they haue and good ones, because they are of Toledo where is the prime of the Spanish too.*  
*W. They are peradventure those which goe there walking.*  
*G. The very same, let vs goe meete them, God save your worships.*  
*I. And welcome in Gods name.*  
*G. Proceede in that conference which passed betwixt you.*  
*I. It seemes that you understood it, that you made answer to it without giuing \* you the qu.*  
*A. We entreated of the salutations which are used in England, and of those which are used in Spaine.*  
*W. Which are better?*  
*A. Truly in that matter, there are abuses on both parts, when the Spaniard saith God keepe you, a good houre haue you, God giue you healib: and the Englishman God den, or good euen, and the other like, I allow it for good salutation.*  
*W. But generally it is disallowed, and they hold them rude that use it.*  
*A. And therefore it is saide, the world goes quite contrarie, and there is no better signe that it is good, then to see it disallowed in the world.*  
*W. And of the other salutations what think you?*  
*A. Of the rest I saie, that when the Englishman doth aske the other, how \* he doth, he utters his owne simplicity, and when the Spaniard saith, I kisse your bandes, hee telleth a great lie.*  
*W. You must giue a reason of your newe opinion.*  
*A. Now tell me I pray you, doth it not seeme vnto you a simplicitie, so aske a man whom you see well, how he doth?*  
 o x G. You

\* As in plaies one takes the last word of anothers speech, and by that knowes when to speake.

\* The Spaniard alloweth not how do you, but how doth your worship or mastership.

G. Tenéys razón, però podría tener algun mal secreto que no se le eche de vér.

A. Estónçes que remedáis vos, con preguntárle como está, No sería mejor, rogár a Dios, que le de salud, como haze el otro.

G. Aóra dezid lo de el Español.

A. El Español digo, que dizé mas mentiras entre año en este caso, que reales da por Dios, porque dezir a el que encuéntra, vísio las manos a v. m. si habla de presente, bien véinos, que miente, pues no se las besa, si de futuro tambien porque bien sabemos, que quando el otro quisiese dar se las por muy amigo que fuesse no se las querría el vefar.

G. Si però parece que es vna manera de reconocimiento de superioridad a el que dize.

A. Así es, però esse reconocimiento no está mas que en la lengua por \* que el refran dize, manos besa hombre que querría vér cortadas.

G. Yo os diré lo que subcedió al propósito, a vn cavalléro viejo español, con otro moço y fue, que como el moço por buena criança, le dixo a el viejo suplico a v. m. me de las manos, que se las quiero besar el viejo confiado en su ançiania, las alargó para que se las besasse, el otro ya arrepentido se las asió con las suyas y con muy buen donaire le dixo senór yo y v. m. a otros dos.

G. El moço anduvo discreto en hazér lo así, y el viejo necio, porque bien sabemos, que palabras de buena criança no obligan.

D. Anfi es verdád, que está çerimónia de besar la mano, solo la deve el vasallo a el señór.

A. Esta sola salua guarda tiene nuestra costumbre

G. You saie well, but he may haue some inward grieffe, which appeereth not outwardely.

A. Then what remedie do you giue him in asking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to send him health as the other doth.

W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.

A. The Spaniard I say in this case telleth more lies within the yeere, then he giues sixpences for God sake, for to say to one, that he meeteth I kisse the handes of your worship, if he speake of the time present, we well see that he lieth seeing he doth not kisse them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would giue him his hands to kisse, if he were neuer so great a friend, yet he would not kisse them.

W. Yea but it seemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of superiority to him, to whom it is spoken.

A. So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the toong: for the proverbe saith, A man kisseth those hands that he would see cut off.

I. I will tell you that which happened for this matter, to an auncient gentleman, a Spaniard, with another yoong man; and it was, as the yoong man for manners sake saide to the old man, I entreate your worship that you will giue me your hands, for I will kisse them: the olde man presuming upon his yeeres, put them out that he might kisse them, the other repenting, tocke him fast by the hands with his owne hands, and with very good pleasantnes, said vnto him, Sir, I and your worship against other two.

W. The yoong man was wise in so doing, and the olde man simple, for well we knowe that wordes of compliment binde not.

I. It is true, this ceremonie of kissing the hand onely the vassall oweth vnto his Lord.

A. This safegard hath our custome, that with



*Diálogos.*

- costumbre que con dezir, bésó a v.m. las manos, parece que es dezir, reconóscó a v. m. por mi Señor, y yo por vuestro vasallo.
- E. Y que os parece de esta costumbre, que tenemos en ynglaterra de asir nos las manos vnos otros?
- A. Dos manos asidas, siempre fue símbolo de amistad, pero dar los tirones, que aqui se dan vno a otro, tengo lo por poca gravedad, y no sé si diga por liviandad.
- E. Antes parece que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amistad.
- A. Esta confirmación ha de ser con obras, y no con ademanes ni tirones, quanto mas que deve aver muchos que con la mano asida y tirando, le deven de eitar con el corazón matando le.
- G. Que dizis de la otra de besar los hombres a las mugeres publicamente.
- A. Esta costumbre tuvo su principio en Róma, en el tiempo que ella florecia, aunque se ynvenció a diferente propósito de el que aóra se usa.
- G. A que fin la ynventaron?
- A. Los Romanos aborrecían tanto el vino en las mugeres, que tenían ley, en que condenava a muerte ala que lo bevia, y porque no lo pudiesen hazer alcódidamente, tenían licencia sus parientes de besar la, para que por el olfato conosciessen, si lo avia bevido.
- G. Si aóra se vbiesse de matar todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedáramos sin mugeres,
- E. No créo, que fuera muy gran pérdida, segun nos son causa de males.
- G. Yo para mi tengo, que la mayor causa de la defolucíon en algunas mugeres de Ynglaterra es esta costumbre de besallos en publico, por que con esto pierden la

*Dialogues.*

51

- with saying, I kisse the hands of your worship, it seemes it is to saie, I acknowledge your worship for my lord, and my selfe for your vassall.*
- G. *And what is your opinion of this custome, which wee haue in England to shake hands one with another?*
- A. *Two bandes fastened together, alwaies hath beene a token of friendship, but to shake and plucke them, as here they do one to another, I hold it for small guarantee, and I knowe not whether I may call it lightnes.*
- G. *Rather it seemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendship.*
- A. *This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with gestures, nor shaking of the hands, and so much the rather, because there are many which with hand in hand shake hands, and in hart would kill each other.*
- W. *What say you of that custome of kissing between men and women and that openly?*
- A. *This custome first began in Rome, in the time it most flourished, although it were inuented for a different purpose, then it is now used.*
- W. *For what purpose was it inuented?*
- A. *The Romanes did so much detest wine in women, that they had a law, in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and because they might not drinke it without being knowen, their kinsfolkes had leaue to kisse the women, that they might knowe by their breath whether they had dronke wine or no.*
- W. *If nowe they should kill all those women which drinke wine, I see we should be quite without women.*
- G. *I beleue that it were not any great losse, seeing they are cause of many evils vnto vs.*
- W. *I holde that the greatest cause of dissolutenes in some women in England is this custome of kissing publicly, for that by this meanes they*

la vergüenza y a el tocamiento del beso, les entra vn veneno que las ynfiçiona.

- A. Antes que se yntroduxesse ésta costumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Lívio, que desterraron de ella a vn senador, persona de mucha quenta, sólo por que besó a su muger delante de vna hija suya
- G. De vn estrémo viniéron a dár en otro estrémo.
- E. En España no se vísá besár los hombres a las mugéres?
- D. Si béñan los maridos a sus mugéres, y esto allá detrás de siete paredes, donde aun la luz no los pueda vér.
- G. Es por que los Españóles son deinafidamente celozos.
- A. No, si no, per que sómos tan trabieffos, que no hémos menestér esse apetito, para hazér. mil malos recaudos que sería si tubiessemos esse Ocaçión.
- G. Yo créo, que antes causaría hastío, y no andarían los hombres, tan golófos, por que vedamiento es causa del apetito.
- A. No es fuego el de la concupisçiénçia, que se ahóga por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydropesia, que mientras mas el enfermo béue mas sed tiéne.
- D. Especialmente entre los Españóles que por sér de complexión coléricos, está *Venus* en su punto.
- G. Yo entiendo éssó al contrario, por que *Venus* consiste mas en vmedád que en calor, por lo qual entiendo que mas aptos son para semejante exercicio los vmedos de complexión, que los coléricos que con de su naturaléza sécos.
- A. Si però la humidád sin calor, sería como la tiérra sin el sol, que no es suficiénte de mísica a produzír cosa alguna.
- D. Por ésse, los poetas, casáron a *Venus* con *Bulcáno* Dios pe el fuégo.
- E. Mas *Bulcáno* ni *Venus* sin *Ceres* y *Baco*

lose their shamefastnes, and at the very touch of the kisse, there entresh into them a poison which doth infect them.

- A. Before this custome was brought into Rome, Titus Linius telleth that they banished out of the citie a senator, a person of great account, onely because he kissed his wife before one of his owne daughters.
- W. They fell from one extremitie into another.
- G. In Spaine do not men vse to kisse women?
- I. Yes the husbands kisse their wives, but as if it were behinde seuen wals, where the very light cannot see them.
- W. It is because the Spaniards are too icalous.
- A. No not so, but because we are so wanton, that we neede nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thousand ill matches which would fall out if we should haue this occasion.
- G. I do rather beleue, that it would cause satietie, and that men would not seeke it so greedily, because forbidding is cause of desire.
- A. The fire of concupiscence, is not such as is extinguished by casting on much matter, but like the dropie, that the more the sicke person drinketh the more thirst still he hath.
- I. Especially among Spaniards, which are of a cholerick complexion, Venus is in her full force.
- G. I take that quite contrarie, because Venus consisteth more in moisture then in heat, whereby it seemes to me that the moist of complexion are more apt to such matters, then the cholericke which are by nature drie.
- A. Yea but moisture without heat, would be as the earth without the sunne, which is not sufficient of it selfe to bring forth any thing.
- I. For this cause the Poets married Venus with Vulcan God of fire.
- G. But neither Venus nor Vulcan, without Ceres

*Diálogos.*

*Baco no valen vn \*caco.*

- G. Pues yo para mi tengo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconcentrado el calor natural, y por ésto con mayor aptitud, en los que biven en las tales regiones.
- A. No es esse calor reconcentrado que está en el coraçon el que es causa de este fuego, sino el que está en la sangre y partes exteriores.
- G. Si però no me negareis, que el calor de la sangre no procede de el, de el hígado.
- A. Assi es verdad, però no obra éste efecto en su origen y fuente, si no quando se ha derramado por las venas, y como la virtud esparzida, es mas flaca que quando está viuida, si quando lo esta es acometido el calor de su contrario el frio, y ésto con fuerça y vehemencia vénse y resfria de fuerte que no puede obrar ni hazer su efecto.
- D. Assi es, y la experiéncia de ésto se vé en los cabrones, que es animal luxuriosissimo, y en llevando le a tierras frías, o no puede bivar, o pierde mucho de su potencia.
- G. Los Faunos o semicápras, que los antiguos llamávan médios dioses cuentan los autores, y poetas, que éran en estrémo luxuriosos.
- E. Es verdad, que úvo o ay tales hombres en en mundo llamados faunos?
- A. En la vida de Sant Páblo primer hermitaño se cuenta, que en aquel desiérto donde el hazia su penitencia, la hazia tambien santo Antonio, el qual como por rebelacion supicse como estava allí cerca san Pablo, le fue avicitar y en el camino encontro con uno, el qual de la cinta para arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, salvo que la cabeça tenia llena de cornes.

*Dialogues.*

53

*Ceres and Bacchus are worth a cherrie stone.*

\* Cáco, a fruit in the Indies or a small peece of money there.

- W. But i for my part thinke, that in countries most cold, the naturall beate is more united in his center, and therefore is there greater desire in those that live in those countries.
- A. It is not that beate, which is seiled about the hart, which is the cause of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exterior parts.
- W. Yea but you will not denie, but that the beate of the blood doth proceede from the heate of the liver.
- A. It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the origmall and fountaine, except when it hath spread it selfe by all the vaines, and as the vertue dispersed is more feeble then when it is united; so when it is so, the beate is set upon by his contrarie the colde, and this cold with force and vehemencie doth overcome and coole in such manner, that it cannot worke his effect.
- I. So it is, and the experience of this is seene in great bee-goats, which is a most luxurious beast, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot live, or he loseth much of his naturall strength.
- W. The Faunes or halfe goates which the auncient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were woonderfully luxurious.
- G. Is it true, that there were and are such men the world called Faunes?
- A. In the life of saint Paull the first Hermit, they say, that in that desert where he made his repentance, Saint Antonie likewise made his, who by revelation knowing he was neere Saint Paull, went to visit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girde upward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little hornes, & from



corneque los pequeños, y de medio para abajo era cabrón con muy largas vedijas, y pies de lo mismo.

E. Hablava alguna cosa?

A. Si que el sancto le habló, y le preguntó quien era y el en un lenguaje muy bárvaro, pero tal que el sancto le pudo entender, le respondió, que era vno de los avitadores de aquel desierto, a quien la ciega gentilidad adorava por dioses, pero que eran criaturas mortales, y dixo mas a el santo, que su grey y gente le enbiava a el por embaxador a rogarle a el Sancto, que roga se por todos a el comun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien favian que avia baxado de el cielo y hecho se hombre por redimir a los hombres, y con esto se fue por aquel desierto, con tanta ligereza que en muy breve espacio, le perdió de vista el sancto.

D. Yo he leydo tambien, que a el emperador Constantino magno, le traxeron de estos desiertos, otro bicho, y lo estubo muchos dias, y despues de muerto salado, le traxeron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le viesse.

G. Bolviendo a nuestra primera plática, que os parece de esta ciudad de Londres?

A. A mi me parece, en verano tienda, y en invierno contienda.

G. Como se entiende esso?

A. Digo que parece, en verano tienda, porque en aquel tiempo, todos los Señores, cavalleros, y hidálgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se van a sus aldeas a passar el verano, quedando en ella solos los oficiales con sus tiendas abiertas.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

A. En ynierno son los terminos y, como acuden de todo el reyno a ella

*the middle downward he was a be-goose with very long bagge haire, and feete of the same.*

G. *Spake he any thing?*

A. *Ten for Saint Anthone spake vnto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithstanding such a language that the holy man could vnderstand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that desert, whom the blinde Gentiles worshipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and saide moreouer to the Saint, that his people & nation sent him to him for an ambassador to entreat the holy mā, that he should pray for all of them, to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come down from heauen, and being made man to redeeme mankind, and herewithall he went thorow the desert with such swiftnes, that in short space the holy man lost the sight of him.*

I. *Also haue I read, that they brought to the Emperour Constantine the great, out of these deserts, another alive, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and salted, they carried him thorow many parts of the world, that all men might see him.*

W. *Turning to our first speech, what do you thinke of the citie of London?*

A. *It seemes to me in sommer a shop, and in winter a contention.*

W. *How is this to be vnderstood?*

A. *I say it seemes in sommer a shop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, do goe out of the citie, and they goe to countrey Villages to passe ouer the sommer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their shops open.*

W. *And why the other?*

A. *In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdom, they come*



*Diálogos.*

ella a sus pléitos está, hecha toda contiéndia o pléito, però vltra de esto es vna de las mejores ciudádes de el mundo a lo que yo entiendo.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en general?

A. Que es fertilíssima y abundante, de todas las cosas que ella produce, espeçial de ganádos, déven de ser los mas gruesos y mejores de el mundo.

G. Y tambien de semillas es muy fértil.

A. Ansi es verdád, però como no puede avér cosa perfecta en este mundo, ya que en esso es abundante, le faltan otras cosas neçessarias, a la vida vmána, que ella por la frialdád de su sitio, no puede produzir, y ansi tiene neçesidad, de comunicaci6n con otros reynos.

G. Que cosas son essas, que dezís que le faltan, que yo créo que no ay cosa en el mundo, que en ella no se halle.

A. Es así verdád, però es comunicádo de otros reynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no se cria óro ni pláta, no se coje vino, ni azéite, açúcar, séda, espeçiería, ni frútas de las regaládas, como son çídras, limónes, limas, naranjas, granádas, alméndras, y otros mil géneros de ellas, muy neçessarios para el regalo de las gentes, y como digo de éstas pocas cosas, pudiéra dezír de otras muchas que déxo.

G. Si, però tenemos otras, que sirven en lugar de essas cosas, y ansi no las echámos menos, como çervéza por vino, mantéca por azéite, y otras semejantes.

A. Con todo esso, sería imposible poder passár éste reyno sin comunicaci6n con otro; lo que no tiene España, que sola entre todas las provínçias de el mundo, podría passár sin comunicaci6n con otra, por produzir, dentro de si todas

*Dialogues.*

55

so it to their pleadings, and so it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in lawe, but besides this it is one of the best cities in the worlde as farre as I perceive.

W. What say you of the whole land in general?

A. That it is most fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring forth, especially flockes of sheepe, which are the greatest and best of the worlde.

W. And also of seedes it is very fertill.

A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this worlde, so although in this it abounds, yet other necessarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which thorow the coldnes of the situation, it cannot bring forth, and so it hath neede of commerce with other nations.

W. What things are those which you saie, that are wanting in it, for I beleeue that there is not anie thing in the world that in it is not found.

A. It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you see that in it, neither groweth gold nor silver, nor wine, oyle, sugar, silk, spice nor fruits of the finest sorte, as are citrons, lymons, oranges, pomegranats, almonds, & a thousand other kindes of them, verie necessarie for the dayntie feeding of men, & as I spake of these fewe things, I could say of many others which I leaue.

W. Yea but wee haue others, which serue in steed of these things, & so we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, & others the like.

A. Notwithstanding all this, it were impossible this kingdome could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine standeth in no neede of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with any

todas las cosas necesarias, a la vida humana.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezir v'na cosa, que España no produce.

A. Qual es?

G. Especiería, que al fin lo trae de la yndia.

A. Tenéys razón, que éssa sola le falta a España, pero, como vos dixistes, tambien se cria en élla, con que se podria suplir éssa falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugar de pimienta, se cria vna yerua que llamamos pimíento, cuya finiente es de tanta fuerça, y de el propio efecto que la pimienta, que viene de yndias, en lugar de clavos, usan muchos de losajos, y si no fuisse por vn mal olorçillo que tienen, son mas sabrosos que esótros, de açafrán gran cantidad se coje en España; genxibre de pocos dias aca, se a començado a plantar en élla, y se da bien.

G. Alomenos no me negaréis, ser mas fértil tierra en general Inglaterra que España.

A. Digo que es verdad, y lo conço, pero tambien osté dezir, que de éssa fertilidad, viene la floxedad en las carnes, y mantenimientos de ella, que son de poco nutrimento y sustancia, y ésta es la causa, de que los yngléses nos notáys a los Españoles por miserables en el comer, por que las carnes de España, como de tierra mas estéril, son de tanto nutrimento que si comiéssse de éllas vn hombre tanto como en ynglaterra come, sin dúbda ninguna, reventaria.

D. Por ésto, ay uno manera de dezir, comun en España, tu padre \*çenó carnéro alsádo, y acofó se, y murió se pues, no preguntas, de que murió.

A. En la propia España tenemos la isperiencia de ésto que la Andaluçia que es tierra mas fértil que

\* A province in Spaine.

any other countrey, bringing forth within it self all those necessarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You say true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue said also, there growes in it that which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In steede of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whose seede is of such strength, and of the very same effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In steede of cloves, many use garlick, and if it were not for a little ill smell which it hath, they are more sanorie then the other. Great quantitie of saffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long since is begun to bee planted therein, and it prospereth well.

W. At least you will not denie me, England generally to be a more fertile countrie then Spaine.

A. I say it is true, and I doe graunt it, but also I cantell you that of this fertilityt proceedes the faintnesse of the flesh there, and the substance of it, which is of small nourishment and sustenance, and this is the cause why the English men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the flesh of Spaine as of a countrie more barren, is of such nourishment, that if a man should eat of it so much as in England they eat, without doubt he should burst.

I. For this cause there is a common saying in Spaine, thy father supped with mutton roasted, and went to bed and died, do not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spain we haue the experience of this, that in Andeluzai which is a country more fertile then \* Estramadura

*Diálogos.*

que *Estremadura*, las carnes de ella, no son con mucho de tanto nutrimento, ni tan buen favor, como estas otras.

E. También se ve esto en los yngléses, que van a España, que dicen que no pueden comer tanta carne allá, como comían acá.

G. Dízime a ora, que os parece, de el trato de nuestra gente?

A. Generalmente hablando, toda la gente ynglésa, es benina, y amorosa, afable, alegre, y amigos de regozijos, y fiestas, agenos de toda melancolía, como aquellos, en quien predomina el humor sanguino, pero fuera de esto, he notado en todos en general tan ynfatiable avaricia, que desdora todas sus virtudes.

G. Y de las mugéres que dezís?

A. Las mugéres generalmente hablando, piénlo que son las mas hermosas de el mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particulares, para ser lo, que son en extremo blancas, coloradas, y rubias, y la que con estas grácias que son generales a todas, acierta a tener buenas faiciones, es acabada en hermosura: pero tambien os digo con la misma generalidad, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales son por vida vuestra?

A. No las quisiéra dezir, por no caer, en desgracia con ellas.

G. Yo fálgo por fiador que no cairéis.

A. \* Teneis razón, que quien nunca subió, no puede caer, pero las tres faltas son, pequeños ojos, grandes bocas, no buena tez en los rostros, y de esto es la causa el ayre tan frio y sutil, que corre en estas partes, que se les cúrte y por esto es buena la ynbinción la, de las mas carillas, aunque yo entiéndiendo que no deve de battár.

G. Vos lo avéis disputado muy bien, y yo os quedo muy aficionado servidór, y así os suplico, que el tiempo que estubiéredes en esta tierra os sirváis de mi.

A. Yo

*Dialogues.*

57

*madura, the flesh is not by odds of such nourishment nor of so good taste as that of Estremadura.*

G. *Also it may bee scene in Englishmen, which go into Spaine, which saie that they cannot eate so much flesh there, as they did eate heere.*

W. *Tell me now, what you thinke of the English manner?*

A. *Speaking generally, al the English people are courteous and louing, affable, and merrie, and lovers of sportes and feastes, free from all melancolie, as those in whome doth predominate the sanguine complexion: but besides this I haue noted in generall, such an insatiable couetousnes, as doth deface all their vertues.*

W. *And what say you of the women?*

A. *The women generally, I thinke they are the most faire of the world, for they haue all the three speciall graces which make the so, they are wonderfully white & red, & that with these graces which are generall to all, there happeneth for them to haue such good fauour, whereby they are most beautifull: but also I tell you with the same generalitie, that they haue three faults.*

W. *I pray you what are they?*

A. *I would not willingly tell them least I fall into disgrace with them.*

W. *I will be your suretie you shall not.*

A. *You say true, be that neuer gat vp, can neuer fall, but the three wants are little eies, great mouthes, and not very smooth skinne in the face, and heereof the cause is for that the aire is so colde and subtil in these parts, which doth tan them, and therefore maskes were well inuented, although as I perceiue they helpe not.*

W. *You haue disputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate seruant, and so I entreat you that the time you are in this countrey you serue me.*

A. I

- A. Yo os doy muchas gracias, por el ofrecimiento, y quedo yo no ménos a vuestro servicio, y por que se va haziendo tarde, nos vamos recojiendo alas posadas que ya es ora.
- G. Beso a vuestras mercedes las manos.
- D. Yo las de vuestras mercedes.

Diálogo séptimo, entre un sargento y un carvo de esquadra, y un Soldado, en el qual se trata, de las cosas pertenecientes a la milicia, y de las calidades que deve tener un buen Soldado, con muchos dichos graciosos y buenas quen-  
tos.

- Sa. ¿Donde camina señor soldado?
- So. AO señor Sargento házia la tabla, si v.m. no manda otra cosa.
- Sa. Lleva muchos dineros que jugar?
- So. Mi paga enterita como la recibí, que no he osado gastar vn real, por no quírar se lo a el juego.
- Sa. Esto es de buenos cofrades, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el juego.
- So. A que sería puedo yo yr, en que mas gane, pues aventuro con quatro ducados ganar quatro-cientos.

\* A horse laden with apples passing a river was carried away, and so both lost.

- Sa. Y si el dado dize mal, allá van rocin y manzanas.
- So. Señor o rico pijado, o muerto des calabrado.
- Sa. Esta es la cuenta de los perdidos.
- So. Cuerpo de tal señor, que hijos o mugér tengo yo que mantener?
- Sa. Si pero ne fuera mejor vestir se que jugar el dinero?
- So. Yo he hecho mi cuenta, y he menester camisas, jubón, sayo, calzones, medias, y çapátos, y sonbrero, y en quatro ducados, no ay para todo, pues comprar vno nuevo,

- A. I give you many thanks, for your offer, and I remaine no lesse at your service, and because it waxeth late, let vs betake our selves to our lodgings, for it is time.
- W. I kisse your hands.
- I. And I yours.

The seventh Dialogue betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a corporall, and a Souldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good foldier ought to haue, with many fine sayings & good speeches.

- Sa. Whither walke you soldier?
- So. WO sergeant towards the dancing place, if you command no other matter.
- Sa. Do you carry with you much money to play?
- So. My whole pay as I receined it, for I durit not spende ove sixe pence thereof, least I should take away so much from play.
- Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.
- So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, seeing I venture with fower duckates, to gaine fower hundred.
- Sa. If the die turne ill, there \* goes horse and apples.
- So. Sir, either hanged rich, or dead with head broken.
- Sa. This is the reckoning of cast awaies.
- So. Bodie of me, what children or wife have I to keepe?
- Sa. Yea but were it not better to apparell your selfe, then to play away your money?
- So. I have reckoned with my selfe, I have neede of shirts, doublet, cassocke, breeches, stockings, shoes, & hat, and in fower ducats there is not for all this, for to buy one thing new



*Diálogos.*

- évo, y traer lo otro viejo, no parece bien, quiero jugar, quizá ganaré para comprar lo todo.
- Sa. Y si los pierde, quedar se ha sin lo vno y lo otro.
- So. Señor, preso por mil, preso por mil y quinientos, todo es estar preso, diré estonçes desnudo naçi, y desnudo me hallo y desnudo moriré.
- Sa. Digame, fave quando entramos de guárdia?
- So. Esta nóche le toca a la compañia.
- Sa. Con que armas sirve con pica, o arcabuz?
- So. Con vn mosquete de siete palmos.
- Sa. Pues como dize, que no facó mas que quatro ducadas teniendo siete depaga.
- So. Vno me descontaron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro le dado a mi camarada para la despenfa de esta semana, y otro que se me quitó de los locorros.
- Sa. Justa está la cuenta.
- So. Es como la de el trillo, cada piedra en su agujero.
- Sa. Quantos son de camarada?
- So. Tres y con migo quatro.
- Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.
- So. çinco con el rábo.
- Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiento?
- So. Tal sea la salud de el apofentador que nos le dió.
- Sa. Como no es bueno?
- So. Peór es vna çahurda de lechónes.
- Sa. Tienen huéspedeta hermosa?
- So. Hermófa señor sariçnto, yo pienfo que los diablos son serafines en su comparación.
- Sa. Bueno es el encareçimiento, que talle tiene?
- So. Ella es mas vieja que *Metusalem*, mas arugada que vna páfa, mas fuzia que vna mosca, mas seca, que vn palo, diente y muela, como por la mano, la boca su-mida, como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerto, y el otro que no se le facaran con vn garaváto finalmente, toda ella es vn retráto

*Dialogues.* 59

- new and weare another old, seemes not well, I will play, peradventure I shall get so much to buy all new.*
- Sa. *If you loose, you must go without one and the other.*
- So. *Sir, arrested for a thousand, taken for a thousand five hundred, all is but to be arrested, I will then saie I was borne naked, and naked I finde my selfe, and naked shall I die.*
- Sa. *Tell me, do you knowe when we watch?*
- So. *This night it falls to the companie.*
- Sa. *What armes serue you with, a pike or shot?*
- So. *With a musket of seaven handfuls.*
- Sa. *How then saide you, that you had but fower ducats, having seaven for your paie?*
- So. *One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I giuen to my comerade for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.*
- Sa. *The reckoning is very right.*
- So. *It is euen as a threshing floore, euerie stone in his bele.*
- Sa. *How many cabbins mates are you together?*
- So. *Three, and with me fower.*
- Sa. *So many feete bath a cat.*
- So. *He bath sine with the taile.*
- Sa. *Haue all you good lodging?*
- So. *I would to God such were the health of the Furriel which gane it vs.*
- Sa. *How so, is it not good good?*
- So. *A pigstie is worse.*
- Sa. *Haue you a faire Hostesse?*
- So. *Faire master Sergeant, I thinke the di-nels are Seraphines in respect of her.*
- Sa. *You giue her good commendations, what handfomnes is in her?*
- So. *She is more olde then Methusalem, more wrinkled then a dried grape, or raisin, more filthie then a flie, more drie then a stick: teeth and chock teeth as in ones hand, the mouth rie filthy wound sunke in as the hole of the taile, the eies one quite out, and the other so sunke into her head that it cannot be plucked out with a hook. In fine, all of her*

\* Succorior  
lendings which  
they giue soul-  
diers when  
there is no paie  
and when the  
paie comes they  
take it off.

\* which goeth  
and sucketh ene-  
or cartion.

- Sa. Esta tal será vnico remedio contra luxuria.
- So. Pues es lo bueno que con todas estas gracias se afeita y repica.
- Sa. Y v.m.no le haze el amor?
- So. Amor, o que boto a tal, no la acometa vn Tigre.
- Sa. Añde, que para vn lava dientes no será mala.
- So. Mas me los quiero traer súzios que no mal lavállos.
- Sa. Mas yo créo, que es como dizen, \*quién dize mal de la yegua, esse la lleua.
- So. Par diez, no foy si no como la zorra que quando no pudo alcançar las vbas, dixo vbas de parra, anfi como affi no las avia gana.
- Sa. Aqui viene el cávo de esquadra, veámos que nuevas trae. de donde viene señor cávo de es esquadra?
- Ca. De la bandéra.
- Sa. Queda alli el alferez?
- C. No señor, que está en casa de el capitán.
- So. A el capitán y alferez déxoyo aóra en casa de el maestre de campo.
- Sa. Que nuevas ay por alla?
- Ca. Nuevas ciertas pocas, mentiras ynfinitas.
- Sa. Que se dize aóra en el cuerpo de guardia?
- Ca. Vnos dizen, que nos embarcáremos para correr la costa, otros que quedaremos aquí de precidio, otros que yrénos a Irlanda, no ay quien lo entiénda.
- Sa. Todo esso es adivinar, cada vno lo que desea o le está bien.
- Ca. Como dezia el otro capitán los soldados son profetas de el diáblo.
- Sa. Y tenia razón, porque affi como el diablo no fave lo por venir, si no que lo conjetura affi házen ellos: y entre mil conjeturas que

- Sa. She must needs be the onely remedie against lust.
- So. But this is the best of her, which with all these good graces is painted out and spoken of.
- Sa. And do you not make loue to her?
- So. Lone, I sweare by such a one, a Tiger would not set vpon her.
- Sa. Goe foole she is good enough to wash ones mouth, and spit out againe.
- So. I had rather they should bring my cloathes foule then ill washed.
- Sa. But I beleue, it is as they say, he that dispraiseth the mare carrieth her away.
- So. By this ten bones I am no otherwise then the foxe, that when he could not reach the grapes, said grape of the vine, so euen so that he had no stomacke to eate them.
- Sa. Here comes the corporall, let vs see what newes hee brings. From whence come you Corporall?
- Co. From the colours.
- Sa. Is the Ancient there?
- Co. No sir, he is at the captaines house.
- So. The captaine and Ensigne I left euen now in the camp-masters house.
- Sa. What newes there about?
- Co. Certaine newes verie fewe, lies infinite many.
- Sa. What say they now vpon the garde?
- Co. One saies, we shall embarke our selues to skoure the coast, others that we shall remaine heere in garrison, others that we shall goe for Ireland, none can tell what.
- Sa. All this is, enery one to gesse at that which hee doth himselfe desire, or liketh well of.
- Co. As another captaine saide, Souldiers are prophets of the diuell.
- Sa. And he said well, for as the diuell doth not know, that which is to come, but by coniecture, so do they: & among a thousand coniectures which they make

*Diálogos.*

que házen, alguna han de açertar.

Ca. Tambien se suena que el rey de España, arma para venir contra Inglaterra.

Sa. Venga en óra buena, si trae muchos dineros que dexámos.

S. Yo con vna cadena de óro que valga cien libras me contento.

Ca. Pues afee que no las suelen vender muy baratas los Españóles.

So. Y yo con vna onça de plomo la pienso comprar.

Ca. E llo es hazer quenta sin la huésped: y quiza yréis por lana, y bolveréis tresquilado: que adonde las dan las toman.

So. Señor, si me matáren, tal dia hizo vn año, tambien murió mi aguelo, ya está olvidado a esso jugámos, oy por mi, mañana por ti, no tengo hijos que dexár huérfanos ni padre ni madre, ni perro que me ladre \* muera Maria y muera háta.

Ca. Plegue a dios que quando llegue la ocaçión no se calçe vnas calças de villa Diego.

Sa. Señor tan buenos hombres ay por los pies como por las manos.

So. Por ser mis oficiales, vuestras mercedes me pueden dezir esso, però si otro me lo dixéra, matára me con el.

Ca. No dezimos aquí, que lo hará, però podría acontecer.

So. Tambien se podría caer el cielo y nos cogería debaxo.

Sa. Demanéra que tanta dificultád ay en huyr v.m. como en caerle el cielo.

Ca. El de la cama dize este soldado.

So. No soy menor de edad que he menester curador, señor cayo de esquadra, yo sabré responder por mi.

Ca. Siempre oy dezir, que vna buena obra se paga con vna mala.

So. \* No

*Dialogues.*

61

make, they are to hit upon one.

Co. In like sorte, the rumor goeth that the king of Spaine makes preparation to come against England.

Sa. Let him come, if he bring good store of crownes to leane vs.

So. I woulde content my selfe with a chaine of golde, that were woorth a hundred pound.

Co. But in faith the Spaniards are not wont to sell them very good cheape.

So. And I hope to buie one with an ounce of lead.

Co. That is to reckon without the Hostesse, and peraduenture you will goe for wooll, and returne home shorne, for where men giue there they receive.

So. Sir, if they kill me, that daie made vp iust a yeere, in like manner died my grandfather, and nowe is forgotten, at this we play, to daie for me, to morrow for thee, I haue no children to leane orphans, neither father, nor mother, nor dogge that barketh at mee, \* let Marta die, yet let her die full.

Co. I pray God that when triall shall bee made, that you doe not \* put on the hose of the towne Diego.

Sa. Sir there are as good men of their feet as of their hands.

So. In that you are my officers, you may say this vnto me, but if another should say so, I would fight with him.

Co. We do not say heere, that you would doe so, but it might happen.

So. As well might \* el Cielo fall, and then it would catch vs vnder.

Sa. So then it is as hard a matter for you to run away as for the skie to fall.

Co. This soldier speaketh of the \* Cielo of his bed.

So. I am not in my nonage, that I neede one to care for me, maister Corporall I shall know how to answere for my selfe.

Co. I haue alwaies heard, that one good worke is requited with an euill.

p 1 So. Do

\* A man having a wife named Marta which he often beate for too much drinking, at last almost killing her she said, Muera Marta, y muera háta. \* i. Run away.

\* El cielo, the skie Also the rest of a bed.

\* i. The sterne of the bed.

So. \* No sabe v. m. que está vna higa en Róma para el que da consêjo a quien no se le pide.

Sa. No se enoje señor soldádo que se hará viejo antes de tiempo.

\* It cannot be worse then it is, or nothing can exceede the highest degree.

So. \* No puede ya sér mas negro el cuervo que sus álas.

Sa. Señor cavo de esquadra, vaya digale a el atambór que toque a recojer la guárdia.

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v. m.

So. Señor sargento déxeme yr a jugar vn rato antes que se meta la guárdia.

Sa. Tanto le pesa esse dinero, que tal priessa tiene por echárlo de si.

So. Yo mas querria doblállo.

Sa. \* No save como díze vn refrán, si quieres tener dineros tendlos.

So. De que sirve tener pocos o Casar onáda.

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

So. Dios me libre de vn azár.

\* i. Multitudes together.

Sa. \* Y ami de vellácos en quadrilla, y villános en gavilla, de moça adivína, y de vieja latina, de lodos a el caminár, y de larga enfermedad, de párrafo de legista, de ynfra de canonista, de eçetera de escrivano, y de rçcipe de médico, de razón de diz que però y si no, y de senténçia de conque.

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recojer.

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buscár a el Sarjento mayor, para que me de el nombre.

Ca. El estará en casa de el general.

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camíno, es menester que ésta noche aya muy buena guárdia.

Ca. Por que ay alguna sospecha?

Sa. Ay nuévas de enemigos, y assi es neçessário doblár las postas y reforçarlas, y ponér dos otras çentinelas

So. Do you not know, that there is a floute for him in Rome, that giues counsell to him that requires it not at his hands.

Sa. Be not angrie master soldier, for it wil make you old before your time.

So. \* The crow cannot be blacker then her feathers.

Sa. Corporall goe and tell the drum that he sound to set the watch.

Co. I goe, sarrie for me here.

So. Sergeant, let me go plaie at dice a little before the watch be set.

Sa. So troublesome is his money to him, that he hasteth to throwe it from him.

So. I woulde rather double it.

Sa. Do you not knowe what the proverbe saith, if you will haue money keepe it.

So. What good will a little do one? either an Emperour or nothing.

Sa. Go in Gods name, and rest when you are well.

So. God keepe me from a hazard.

Sa. And me from knaues in my Squadró, & clownes\* in stock; together from a maide that is a propheteffe; and an old woman a latrist; from durst in iourneies; and from long sickness; from the paragrasse of the lawyer; from the infra of the Canonist; from the et cetera of the Scrivenour; from the recipe of the Phisition; from that reason that saith, He saith that, but, if not; and from the sentence of with which.

Co. Now sounds the drum to set the watch.

Sa. In the meane while let vs go seeke the Sergeant major, that he may giue me the worde.

Co. He will be at the generals house.

Sa. Let vs go thither, for it is all in our waie, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.

Co. Why, is there any suspicion of anie thing?

Sa. There is newes of the enimie, and therefore needful to double the set men to watch, & to make them strong, and



*Diálogos.*

çentinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visiten amenúdo.

Ca. Pida v.m.a el fargento mayor, que nos den leña harta, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guardia.

Sa. Anfi será, y todas las armas estarán \* muy apunto que hombre aperçevído, médio combatído.

Ca. Menester será dar a los soldados pólvora, cuérda, y balas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y orden a los coseletes que no les falte peça.

Ca. Qual es la mejor arma de las que vsamos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la reyna de las armas.

Ca. Poco valdrían las picas, sino se guarden con la arcabuzería, que dañan a el enemigo desde fuera.

Sa. Menos valdría la arcabuzería, si despues de dada la carga, no tuviéssse adonde repararse de la cavallería enemiga, y de todos los demás que le procuráren dañár.

Ca. Si, però bien vemos que mayor daño se le haze a el enemigo con la arcabuzería, y mosquetería, que con las picas.

Sa. Todo esse daño es poco en comparación de el que se recibe a el defbarate de vn esquadron o exercito, el qual se seguiría luego con la cavallería, si las picas que es vna muralla fuerte, no se pusiesse ala defenía.

Ca. Por esso compáran a vn esquadron bien formado, a el cuerpo vmano donde los braços, y piernas, que son los que obran son los arcabuzeros y las picas que están siempre firmes, y es de dó viene virtud, a todas las partes de el esquadron, el cuerpo y coraçón.

Sa. Afli es, y aun si mirais la forma de vn esquadron de los ordinarios formado, con sus mángas, hallaréis en el, la misma forma de el cuerpo vmano.

Ca. Que partes se requiere que tenga vn buen soldado.

Sa. Muchas

*Dialogues.*

63

and to put two or three \* lost centinels, and that the round & counterround may go very thicke. \* Those that lie close under the enimie to heare that they saie and do.

Co. Require of the Sergeant maior, that hee giue vs woode enough, that there be a good fire vpon the body of the garde.

Sa. So it shall be, and all the armes to be very readie, for a man well warned halfe armed.

Co. It will be needfull to giue to the soldiers powder, maich, bullets.

Sa. All shall be giuen them, and order for the corselets that they want no piece.

Co. Which is the best weapon, of those wee use in warre?

Sa. The pike is the queene of weapons.

Co. Of little anaile were pikes, if they were not lined with shot, which hurteth the enimie a farre off.

Sa. Of lesse anaile were the shot, after they had discharged, if they had no place to defend themselves from the enimies horsemen, & all the rest which should endeuor to offend them.

Co. Yea, but we well see, that greater damage is made to the enimie, by small shot and musket, then with pikes.

S. All this dammage is little in comparison of that is receiued at the ouerthrow of a squadron or armie, the which would followe straight with the horse, if the pikes, which is a strong wall, did not put themselves in defence thereof.

C. Hereby they compare a squadron well in order, to a mans bodie, where the armes and legs which are those that worke, as the shot and the pikes which stande alwaies firme, and from whence proceede force to all the parts of the squadron, to the bodie and hart.

S. So it is, and also if you marke well the fashion of a squadron of the ordinarie squadrons made with his wings, you shall finde in it the very fashion of a mans bodie.

C. What parts are required in a good soldier?

p 2

S. Many

Sa. Muchas, y muchos escriviéron de ésta materia, pero las mas necesarias y ordinarias, yo las diré. El soldado, quanto a lo primero, deve ser muy honroso, porque soldado sin honra sería de ningun provecho, pues ella es la escuela que le ha de hazer obrárlo, que no bástan preñios, ni ruegos, ni amenazas de sus oficiales.

Ca. Por esso, deve el soldado traer, siempre escrita en la frente aquella \* coplilla que dize, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo segundo deve ser el soldado valiente no temeroso ni covarde.

C. \* El soldado covarde mas propiamente se podría llamar espantajo, al qual quando los paxaros le pierden una vez el miedo, se asientan encima de el, o como el Rey de las ranas.

S. Como es esso de el Rey de las ranas?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de maricañana, las ranas desleáron tener Rey como todas las demas naciones, y pidieron a *Jupiter* que era Rey de los dióces que les diése Rey el qual viendo su necesidad quiso burlár de ellas, y dixo les que para un dia señalado les daría Rey, ellas le esperávan con grande alegría, y venido aquel día, salieron todas, de sus casas, muy compuestas, como convenia para recebir a su rey y pusieron se en la superficie de el agua esperando; en este tiempo *Jupiter* arrojó desde el cielo, vn gran madéro, que dió con el, en la laguna donde, ellas estáyán, tan grã golpe, y hizo tan gran ruido que ellas fueron todas turbadas, y asombradas, y unas por aqui, y otras por alli, cada una huyó a su casa, sin osár llegar, a hazér a su rey el devído acatamiento, ni salir fuera en muchos dias quedó se el madéro nadando encima de el agua, y ellas con tanto temor

S. Many, and many have written of this matter, but the most necessarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The soldier touching the first point, ought to be honorable, for a soldier without honor would profit little, because it is the spur which drives him on to effect that, which rewards are not sufficient to doe, nor intreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.

C. Therefore the soldier should carrie alwaies written in his forehead this verse, which saith, For thy honor hazard thy life, and hazard them both, honor and life for thy God.

Sa. The second, the soldier ought to be valiant, and not fearful nor coward.

Co. A cowardly soldier may better be called, a thing made to feare away crows, that when the birdes doe once cast off their feare of the same, they sit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.

Sa. How is that of the king of frogs?

Co. They say, in olde time, when beastes could speake, the frogs desired to have a king, as other nations had, and they requested *Jupiter*, which was king of the Gods, that he would give them a king, which seeing their simplicitie, would needs mock them a little, and told them that by a day appointed, he would give them a king: they waited for it, with great joy, and the day being come, all of them came forth out of their houses, well attired, as was fit for the receiuing of a king, and put themselves upon the upper part of the water waiting: then *Jupiter* casteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gave such a blow, and made such a noise, that they were all troubled, & amazed; some this way, others that way, every one ranne home to his house without daring to come neere, to make their due reverence to their king, nor to come forth a doores in many daies. The beame remained

mór de vér cosa tan grande, que ninguna ofáva salir fuera de su casa, y allí morían de hambre, hasta que poco apoco fue saliendo la mas esforçada, y siguiendo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiendo mas el temór, y se yvan llegando cerca de su rey, viendo le a el tan manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palabra, al fin tanto continuaron y (como la mucha conversación es causa de menosprecio) se llegaron a su rey y viendo todas lo que era, saltaron encima de el, y començaron a cheriár y dar grandes rifadas, haziendo burla de su Rey, y de su temor pasado bolviéron pues, a ynfiltrir a *Iupiter* que en todo cáoles diéssse Rey no tan mánso, si no que fuéssse justiciéro, *Iupiter* viendo su neçia porfia les ymbió por Rey a la çigueña, la qual rýna hasta oy entre ellas, çebando se y comiendolas cada dia en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo bivir libres quisieron mas hazér se esclávas y mas vn Rey cruel, que mánso y benigno.

Sa. No ha estado malo el quento, y mejor es la moralidad.

Ca. Dexémos esto aora, y prosiga v.m. adelante con su plática de el buen soldado.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tener ha de ser gran sufridor de travájos, y para esto deve ser de rezia complexion.

Ca. Ya el que esto no tuviere, el diablo le truxo a la guerra, como dizen de el moço vergonzoso, que el diablo le trajo a palacio.

Sa. Deve tambien ser muy obediente a sus oficiales, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrar mal Rostro lo que le ordenaren siendo de el servicio de la Reyna.

Ca. Quiten le a la milicia la obediencia

ned there swimming upon the water, & they with such feare, to see a thing so great, that none of them durst once go out of his dores, & therein they died with hunger, untill that by little and little, the most hardiest of them went out, and the rest following, every day they went more & more, losing their fear, & they went neerer to their king seeing him so gentle, and that he mouned not, nor said never an ill worde to them, in the end they continued so long, and (as much familiaritie oftentimes breedes contempt) they approched to their king, & seeing all of them what he was, they leaped upon him, & they began to crook & to break out into great laughers, making a iest of their king, and of their own passed feare: they returned afterward to importune *Iupiter*, that by all means he would give them a king, but not so still and quiet, but that he should be a justicer; *Iupiter* seeing their foolish importunitie, sent the Stork to them for a king, the which reigneth til this day among them, fattening himselfe, and eating them up every day, as a punishment for their fond request, when they might have lived at libertie they would make themselves slaves, and rather set up a cruell king, then a benigne and gentle.

Sa. The tale hath not bene ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Co. Let vs leave this, and goe forward with your speech of the good souldier.

Sa. The third that he is to have, is to be a great endurer of travells, and for this he should be of a strong complexion.

Co. And he that hath not this, the Diuell brought him to the warre, as it is said he brought the blisshfaced young man to the court.

Sa. He ought also to be very obedient to his officers, and that he performe that obedience with a good will, & without shewing an ill countenance to that they shall ordaine, being for the Queenes service.

Co. Let them take away obedience in souldiers



cia en los soldados, y bolver se ha en confusión Babilónica.

Sa. Otras muchas particularidades, ha de tener el buen soldado, que yo no quiero tratar aora, quien las qui siere ver, lea quatro o cinco tratados que andan de ello en lengua Española vno de el capitán Martin de Eguluz y otro de Escalante otro de don Fernando de Cordua, y otro de don Bernardino de Mendoza, que alli lo verá bien pintado.

Ca. A qui buelve nuestro mosquetero muy cabizbajo viene, perdido deve de aver.

Sa. A señor soldado vna palabra.

So. Dexe me v.m. señor Sarjento, basta me mi mala ventura.

Sa. Que ha sido, perdióse toda el armada?

So. No topára yo aqui aora con el veláco que este juego ynventó.

Sa. Que le quería dezir?

So. Reniego del diablo, sino le avía de hazer mas tajadas que puntos se han echádo en los dados des pues que el los ynventó.

Sa. ✱ Eſso me parece echár la culpa de el asno a la aluárda quien le mandó a v.m. jugar.

So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme desesperar para llevárme.

Sa. Pues mire no le crea, sino quando venga, diga le que por aora no puede yr, que está ocupado en servicio de su magestad, que se buelva otro día, y si no quiérese deshagale la horquilla en la cabéça.

So. Muy bueno va esso, estóy yo rabiando y esta se v.m. burlando de mi.

Sa. Mire, yo le daré un buen remedio tomo dos onças de jaráve de paciència, y quatro de unguento de oluido y beualo todo, y con ello purgará éssa malenconía y quedará luego buéno.

So. Serán dos purgas una tras otra despues

diers in war, and it will turne to a Babiloncall confusion.

Sa. The good soldier is to have many other particulars, which I will not now handle, whoſoeuer will ſee them, let him reade ſower or ſine treatiſes, which handle it in the Spaniſh tongue, one of captaine Martin Eguluz, another of Escalante, another of Don Fernando de Cordua, and another of Don Bernardino Mendoza, there may it bee ſeene well ſet out.

Co. Here comes backe againe our muſketier, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath loſt.

Sa. Ho Soldier a word with you.

So. Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I have ill lucke.

Sa. What hath happened, is all the ſcete loſt?

So. I would not meete now with that villaine that inuented this play.

Sa. What would you ſay to him?

So. I renounce the deuill if I woulde not giue him more ſlaſhes then hath ſet prickes on dice, ſince he inuented them.

Sa. This ſeemes to me, to put the fault of the aſſe on the packeſaddle. Who commanded you to play?

So. The diuell which ſleepes not, and follows after mee to drine me into deſpaire, that he might carrie me away.

Sa. Then marke what I ſay, do not beleue him, but when he comes tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are imployed in her Maieſties ſeruite, that he come another day, and if he will not, clap your muſket ſtaffe on his pate.

So. This goes well, I ſtand raging, and you mocking.

Sa. Behold, I will giue you a good remedie, Take two ounces of the ſirrupe of patience, and ſower ounces of the oile of forgetfulneſſe, and drinke it off, and with this you ſhall purge this melancholy, and forthwith you ſhall be well.

So. That will be two purges one after another



*Diálogos.*

pues de purgada la bolsa pur-  
gár el cuerpo.

Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezír, que un  
clavo sáca otro, y una máno la-  
va otra y entrambas la cara.

Ca. Pues como se dió tan presto fin ala  
triste tragédia.

So. Yo les diré a vuestras merçedes co-  
mo fue, el me dió a parár a on-  
ze, paré le quatro reales, echó-  
me un enquentro, y tirómelos.

Sa. Mal principio.

So. Antes suelen dezír, que es buen  
pronóstico perdré la primer a  
mano.

Ca. No ay regla tan general que no  
tenga excepción.

So. Dióme a parar luego a doze, que  
es mi fuerte, paréle ocho rea-  
les, échoun azár, díxe repáro-  
los, o torgó me el repáro, lançó  
el dádo, y echó otro azár.

Sa. Pues pecador, para que queriades  
mas de avér ganádo con quaren-  
ta otros quarenta, que mercader  
ay que gane a çiento por çien-  
to.

So. Señor, yo no me contenté sino quí-  
se arrancár las clavos de la mesa  
como dízen, y díxe siete y lle-  
var, dixome, digole, Relança y  
echa su fuerte, y arrebuja cō todo  
\* ami dexóme del agalla, sin  
blanca como el diablo se apare-  
cio a san Benito.

Ca. \* Siempre lo verá, que quien todo  
lo quiere todo lo pierde.

So. \* Mas siempre despues de ydo el  
conçejo viene el consejo.

Sa. \* Aóra bien quien erra y se enmi-  
enda a Dios se encomienda.

So. La enmienda será empeñar el ca-  
potillo, para bolverme a esqui-  
tár si puedo.

Sa. Esta no será enmienda sino obsti-  
nación.

So. \* Aqui perdí vna agúja, aqui la  
tengo de hallár.

Sa. No veis pecador que se os cayó en  
la mar esta agúja, como la que-  
reis hallár?

So. Yo

*Dialogues.*

67

other, after the purse is purged to  
purge the bodie.

Sa. Have you neuer heard, that one naile dri-  
ueth out another, one hand washet  
another, and both of them the face.

Co. But how made you such a quicke ende  
of the sad tragedie?

So. I will tell you how it was, he chaunced  
me a eleven, I set him two shillings,  
he cast and drew them.

Sa. An ill beginning.

So. Rather they are wont to say, it is a  
good signe to loose the first hand.

Co. There is no rule so generall which hath  
not some exception.

So. He chaunced me forth with twelue which  
is my chance, I set him fower shil-  
lings, he cast a hazard, I said I set  
again, he allowes of it, he throwes  
the dice, & casts another hazard.

Sa. Why wretched sinner, what would you  
more then to gaine with fortie  
other fortie, what marchant is  
there which doth gaine a hundred  
for a hundred?

So. I was not content but would pull in pee-  
ces the nailes of the table as they  
say, and I saide I set fewen times so  
much as he drew, he said content,  
I saie content. He throwes againe  
the dice, & he drew vp al, and so he  
left me \* hanging on the gill, with-  
out a farthing, as the diuell ap-  
peared to Saint Benit. \* As a fish.

Co. You shall alwaies see, be that all conse-  
teth, all loofeth.

So. But after the steede stollen, shut the  
stable doore.

Sa. Now he that erres and amends, so God  
himselfe commends.

So. The mends wil be to pawne the cassock,  
so go again to quit my selfe if I can.

Sa. This will not be an amends but obsti-  
nacie.

So. Heere lost I a needle, and beere hope I  
to finde it againe.

Sa. Do you not see, that this needle fell into  
the sea, how will you now finde it?

So. I

So. Yo me tengo de yr a vna hechizera,  
que me de vna soga de ahorcá-  
do, que dizen que es buena pa-  
ra hazer ganar.

Ca. ✱ Castiga me mi madre y yo tróm-  
pose las.

Sa. A ora señor vamos por aóra a me-  
ter la guardia, que despues se  
tratara de esso.

Ca. Vaya a llamar sus camaradas.

So. Yo voy, befo a vuestras mercedes  
las manos.

Ca. Yo tambien quiero yr por mis ar-  
mas.

Sa. Yo me voy a la vandera, alli espe-  
raré.

So. I am to go to a witch that she may giue  
me a rope of a hanged man, which  
they say is good to make one winne.

Co. My mother doth chastice me, and I  
mocke and merue at it.

Sa. Now sir, let vs go euennow to set the  
watch, for afterwards we will talke  
beere of.

Co. Go and call your Cameradoes.

So. I go, I take my leave of you.

Co. I will also go for my armes.

Sa. I goe to the colours, there will I tar-  
rie.

F I N I S.

